

Biogr. C. 442 ^m
(6)

David Williams, F. R. S.

No 335

<36635185100014

<36635185100014

Bayer. Staatsbibliothek





GEORGE WHITEFIELD.

Published by Hunt & Clarke, Tavistock Street, Covent Garden.

AUTOBIOGRAPHY.

A Collection

OF THE

MOST INSTRUCTIVE AND AMUSING

LIVES

EVER PUBLISHED,

WRITTEN BY THE PARTIES THEMSELVES.

**WITH BRIEF INTRODUCTIONS, AND COMPENDIOUS SEQUELS
CARRYING ON THE COURSE OF EVENTS TO THE
DEATH OF EACH WRITER.**

VOL. VI.—WHITEFIELD, FERGUSON.

LONDON:

**PRINTED FOR HUNT AND CLARKE,
TAVISTOCK-STREET, COVENT-GARDEN.**

Biogr. C. 442 ^m - 16

AUTOBIOGRAPHY.

A Collection

OF THE

MOST INTERESTING AND AMUSING

LIVES

LONDON

Printed by WILLIAM CLOWES,
Stamford-street.

WRITTEN BY THE LATE JAMES HAMILTON.

WITH BRIEF INTRODUCTIONS, AND CORRECTIONS
GIVEN ON THE COURSE OF EVENTS TO THE
DEATH OF EACH WRITER.

VOL. VI.—WILKIEFIELD, HENRIETSON.

LONDON:

PRINTED BY J. D. CLARKE,
STATIONER-STREET, LONDON.

Bayerische
Staatsbibliothek
München

in BA

JOURNAL
OF A
VOYAGE

FROM
LONDON TO SAVANNAH
IN GEORGIA.

BY GEORGE WHITEFIELD, A. B.

OF PEMBROKE-COLLEGE, OXFORD.

LONDON: Another instructive
is answered by a comparison of the temporary or
PRINTED FOR HUNT AND CLARKE,

TAVISTOCK-STREET, COVENT-GARDEN.

JOURNAL

OF A

VOYAGE

FROM

LONDON TO SAVANNAH

IN GEORGIA

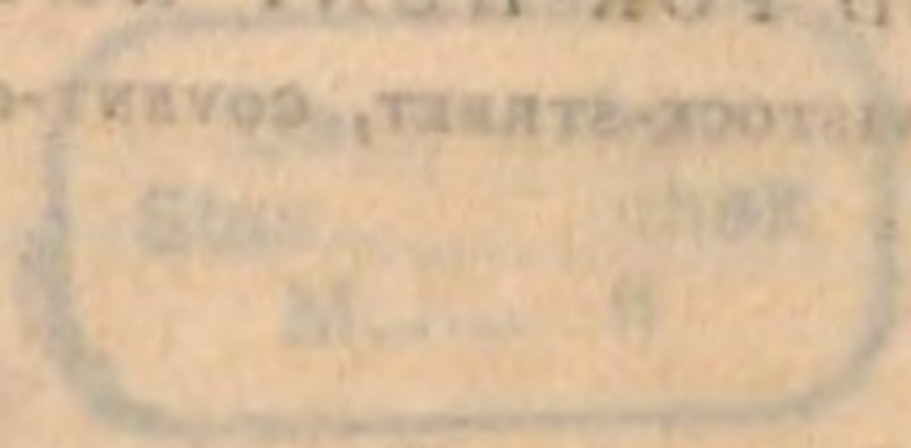
BY GEORGE WHITEFIELD, A. B.

OF PENNSYLVANIA-COLLEGE, OXFORD.

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR HUNT AND CLARKE,

STATIONER-STREET, COVENT-GARDEN.



EDITOR'S PREFACE.

As there may be some difference of opinion in relation to the claims of a portion of the Journals of John Wesley and George Whitefield, to a place in this collection, it may be necessary for those who most doubt the propriety of their introduction, to call to mind the principal literary objects of its formation,—namely, a wide and diversified view of human character. Without entering into comparison or investigation, which forms no part of the intended plan, it may be allowable to observe, that both the conspicuous persons alluded to, not only gave a peculiar colour to the religious complexion of the century in which they flourished, but laid the foundation of establishments which still prosper; and in the one instance may, possibly, at no distant period, either in the way of collision or junction,* even operate upon the fortunes of the church of England. Such being the fact, it has been thought that a well-authenticated specimen from the journals of each of these methodistic founders, might be given with a view to an instructive exhibition of the human mind, under the excitement of enthusiasm, both active and passive; the Journalist himself illustrating the effects in the one case, and the recorded conduct of his hearers, the operation in the other. Another instructive end is answered by a comparison of the temporary or the intended, with the permanent and the actual result,

* In respect to the latter alternative, Dr. Southey, the most prominent lay champion for the church, has even suggested a reception of the Wesleyan priesthood, as a species of protestant *Franciscans*, with a view to the greater diffusion of religion among the people at large.

as unfolded by time and experience. In a word, religious enthusiasm has produced such extraordinary consequences in society, it has been thought that a brief example of the manner in which the two most eminent of modern English leaders,* have recorded the spirit and effect of their respective labours, would be altogether within the scope of this undertaking, in which, as already observed, the leading purpose is to combine the most comprehensive illustration of general character, with as much entertainment as can be rendered compatible with a due fulfilment of it. Happily that is a great deal. Upon the whole, however, difference of taste may vary as to the extent of the assumed licence in particular instances; a due allowance for diversity of liking will be very readily made by all who duly appreciate the variety of characteristic exhibition which the plan necessarily embraces.

* John Wesley's Journal will be given after a due interval.

* In respect to the latter alternative, Dr. Southey, the most prominent lay champion for the church, has even suggested a reception of the Wesleyan priesthood, as a species of protestant Franciscans, with a view to the greater diffusion of religion among the people at large.

INTRODUCTION.

IN the present instance, it is not intended to give any thing beyond the very briefest summary of the life of the once celebrated author of the following journals; and that simply to convey such a notion of his general career, as will serve for those who, in perusing them, may not be disposed to the labour of a reference to more ample sources.

George Whitefield, one of the founders of the sect at one time generally called methodists, although that name is now nearly restricted to the followers of John Wesley, was born on the 6th of December, 1714, at the Bell-inn, at Gloucester, which was kept by his father. In his own account of himself, he confesses that his childhood was marked with every petty crime of which early years are susceptible; but divested of the peculiar language adopted by the votaries of his class of religious feeling, it is probable that they went not beyond the usual failings of a lad, brought up in a situation not over favourable to extreme purity of morals. This is the more likely, as he notices many occasional gleams of grace indicative of his future experience. He was sent for education to the grammar-school at Gloucester, where he distinguished himself by a ready memory and good elocution, which enabled him to figure to advantage in his speeches made before the corporation, at their annual visitation. He had also made some progress in Latin, when in consequence of the early death of his father, and the pecuniary difficulties of a sensible and indulgent mother, he was taken home, and obliged to take a share in the homely toils

of business at the Bell-inn. Notwithstanding the evil propensities with which he charges himself, he mentions the composition of sermons, even at this time, as well as of his experience of many devotional impulses, and of his diligent perusal of the Bible.

About the age of eighteen he embraced the offer made him of being entered as a servitor at Pembroke-college, Oxford, and here joining himself to Charles Wesley, and several other young men, under the influence of religious impressions, his enthusiastic disposition was rapidly kindled. He describes himself as "lying whole days and nights on the ground in silent or vocal prayer; leaving off the fruits of the earth; choosing the worst sort of food; thinking it unbecoming a penitent to have his hair powdered, and wearing woollen gloves, a patched gown, and dirty shoes, to acquire a habit of humility." In other words he acted pretty much in the ascetic spirit of that devotion which in catholics have led men to the desert and the cloister; so identical are the general tendencies of poor human nature, however occasionally varied by the circumstances and accidents which attend their exhibition.

These indications of a spiritual turn of mind being reported to Dr. Benson, bishop of Gloucester, that prelate made Mr Whitefield, then in his twenty-first year, an offer of ordination, which he accepted, and after much prayer and study of the thirty-nine articles, he was made a deacon in 1736. Such was the fervency of his manner, that at his first sermon in Gloucester, "On the necessity and benefit of religious society;" a complaint was made to the bishop that he had driven fifteen persons mad, on which the latter calmly observed that he hoped the madness would not be forgotten before the next Sunday. Whitefield then returned to Oxford, took the degree of B. A., and diligently exercised himself in the instruction of the poor and the prisoners. For the two succeeding years, by his preaching in London, Bath, Bristol, and other places, his fame became widely diffused; large auditories every where attended upon him, and of his powers of gaining and

fixing attention in the pulpit, the most ample and disinterested testimonies are afforded. He had the advantage of a strong and musical voice, over which he possessed an extraordinary command, a clear and distinct pronunciation, and a vein of natural eloquence springing from an active imagination and ardent feelings. His topics were of the kind best adapted to work upon spontaneous and undisciplined minds. He roused them by appalling pictures of the terrors of the Lord; and when thereby awakened, consoled them by the doctrines of regeneration and justification by faith. His first sermon in London was delivered in 1736, at St Botolph, Bishopsgate, and he also preached alternately at the chapel of the Tower, at Wapping chapel, and in the prison at Ludgate.

In the same year, 1736, he received an invitation to officiate as minister at Dummer, in Hampshire, and about this time began to feel anxious to join the Wesleys and Ingham, who had gone out as missionaries to a new colony at Georgia, and whose letters inspired him with a warm inclination to join them. Being soon after expressly invited to repair to them, towards the close of 1737 he undertook the voyage of which the following journal forms a record. It is deemed proper to usher it in with the original preface, showing the cause of its publication, which appears to have originated in the fact of a copy having reached the press against his wishes.

Mr W. and every author has an undoubted right to suppress any work of his so long as he pleases; and if he think fit to have it printed, he is to determine who shall print it. He likewise has a power to submit his work to the judgment and correction of friends chosen by himself, either entirely to suppress it, if they think that proper; or, if they think more proper to publish it, then to prepare it for the press.

PREFACE.

THE following journal would never have been published, had not a surreptitious copy of part of it been printed without the author's knowledge or consent. He knows himself too well to obtrude his little private concerns upon the world, especially when intermixed with such passages relating to others, as none but an unthinking person could judge proper to divulge.

Had I (to whom alone Mr W. gave authority to print what his friends should think proper) been advised to publish this journal, all names would certainly have been left out, with those less material circumstances which manifest the persons. And it was at the earnest solicitation of several of Mr W.'s friends that I determined to print the whole, lest something should be trumped up for a voyage from London to Gibraltar.

Those who are mentioned in the surreptitious copy, will, we doubt not, wholly acquit Mr W. and his friends of it; and several of them we hope by this time think it no scandal to be convicted Christians.

Mr Cooper, it seems, is offended with my calling his edition of Mr W.'s journal a surreptitious one; but, as it crept into the world by stealth, without any just warrant or authority, I know not how to give it a softer epithet.

Mr W. and every author has an undoubted right to suppress any work of his so long as he pleases; and if he think fit to have it printed, he is to determine who shall print it. He likewise has a power to submit his work to the judgment and correction of friends chosen by himself, either entirely to suppress it, if they think that proper; or, if they think more proper to publish it, then to prepare it for the press.

Now Mr W. gave Mr Cooper no leave to print his journal, nor to any person from whom Mr Cooper received it. He sent the journal to me to be communicated privately to his friends; but not to be made public without the advice and correction of certain persons particularly known to me, of whose judgment he has a better opinion than of his own. But neither have those friends of Mr W. approved the publishing of this journal by Mr Cooper, nor given him any copy prepared for the press.

This I think sufficiently justifies my calling his, surreptitious.

Mr Cooper likewise knows Mr W. has published (in advertisements with his name affixed) that, for the future, every thing wrote by him should be published by me only, and no other. Had, therefore, Mr Cooper paid a due regard to justice and his neighbour's property, he would have asked the person who offered the copy for sale this question, very often asked by honest tradesmen: How he came by it? What right he had to dispose of it? A little inquiry would have satisfied him that the person, whoever he was, could give him no just warrant to print it.

By not making this inquiry, Mr Cooper has been guilty of a great oversight, to say no worse of it. And it is to be hoped, that no persons of honour or worth, whether Mr W.'s friends or others, will buy any of these surreptitious copies, and encourage practices so utterly inconsistent with fair trading.

JAMES HUTTON.

Temple-bar,
August 18, 1738.

Now Mr W. gave Mr Cooper no leave to print his journal, nor to any person from whom Mr Cooper received it. He sent the journal to me to be communicated privately to his friends; but not to be made public without the advice and correction of certain persons particularly known to me, of whose judgment he has a better opinion than of his own. But neither have those friends of Mr W. approved the publishing of this journal by Mr Cooper, nor given him any copy prepared for the press.

This I think sufficiently justifies my calling his sur-

no just warrant to print it.

Mr Cooper likewise knows Mr W. has published (in advertisements with his name affixed) that, for the future, every thing wrote by him should be published by me only, and no other. Had, therefore, Mr Cooper paid a due regard to justice and his neighbour's property, he would have asked the person who offered the copy for sale this question, very often asked by honest tradesmen: How he came by it? What right he had to dispose of it? A little inquiry would have satisfied him that the person, whoever he was, could give him

By not making this inquiry, Mr Cooper has been guilty of a great oversight, to say no worse of it. And it is to be hoped, that no persons of honour or worth, whether Mr W's friends or others, will buy any of these surreptitious copies, and encourage practices so utterly inconsistent with fair trading.

MR WHITEFIELD'S JOURNAL.

PART I.

FROM LONDON TO GIBRALTAR.

My dear friends,

ACCORDING to your request, I have herewith sent you an account of what God has done for my soul since I left England. The sole motive (if my heart doth not deceive me) which induced me to leave my native country was a full conviction that it was the Divine Will I should. What reasons I can urge for this persuasion, is needless to mention, because few in this case would judge impartially; and what seems a reason to me may not be deemed so by another. Let it suffice to inform you, that after earnest prayer for a year and a half, that if the design was not of God, it might come to naught, though strongly solicited to act in a contrary manner, I found myself as eagerly bent on going abroad as ever.

Accordingly, Wednesday, December 28, 1737, after having continued instant in prayer with my friends at Mr J. H.'s, and afterwards receiving the holy sacrament at St Dunstan's, being recommended to the grace of God by a great number of weeping Christian brethren at the rev Mr H.'s, I set out at night for Deptford in a coach, accompanied by four friends, and got there at ten. Here a widow woman gladly received

us in her house ; and many of my friends gave me the meeting, who came on foot from London, with intent to accompany me to the ship, and with them I took a little bodily refreshment ; spent two or three hours in particular intercession for our friends and enemies, and all mankind ; sung psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, and then betook ourselves to rest, and the Lord made us to dwell in safety. Oh ! who can express the unspeakable joy of religious friends ?

Thursday, December 29. Rose early in the morning, and continued instant in intercession, chanting and singing of psalms with my friends till nine, at which our hearts were much rejoiced. After this we went in quest of our ship, but finding she was fallen down to Purfleet, and was not to remove to Gravesend for some time, we returned to Deptford praising God, and praying for a blessing on our intended voyage. The Lord perform all our petitions !

Being returned to Deptford with my friends, we dined comfortably together, joined in a psalm, read the lessons for the day, and concluded with prayer. Some were then obliged to depart for London. After they were gone, I continued with the rest in particular intercession for near two hours, and then God was pleased to comfort my heart. If parting from a few earthly friends for a season be so grievous, how will the wicked bear to be parted from God and good men for all eternity ?

It happened providentially that a lecture was to be preached that evening at Deptford, and several importuned me to preach it. At first I was fearful (O me of little faith) having no notes. But afterwards (having got the consent of the minister) I went up, depending on the promise, "Lo ! I am with you always even unto the end of the world ;" and was enabled to preach to a large congregation without the least hesitation. Did any one yet ever trust in the Lord and was forsaken ? What gave me a great comfort, and made me more thankful was, that the opportunity, I believe, was granted in answer to prayer.

Friday, December 30. Went with our baggage and nine or ten friends in a Gravesend boat to Purfleet, where the Whitaker was fallen down. Spent the time we were on the water in singing psalms, and particular intercession; and came on board about ten in the morning.

I spoke some few things to my new charge, spent the remainder of the day on shore with my friends, in singing psalms, prayer, and exhorting one another to love and good works: returned at night to our ship, and lay with my friend H. upon the ground on a mattress, in the great cabin. And God was pleased to give me a proof that he was with me in the ship.

Saturday, December 31. Began this morning to have public prayers on open deck, at which the officer and soldiers attended with decency and reverence. After prayer I enlarged a little on those words of St. Paul, "I am determined to know nothing among you save Jesus Christ and him crucified," told them how my future conduct would be; made some professions of my hearty love and sincere affection for their souls, and then dismissed them, I believe somewhat moved. Oh, that I may have grace to act suitably to this profession!

To-day also I began to visit the sick, and took that opportunity of discoursing on the uncertainty of life, and the certainty of a future judgment, to those around me; and God was pleased not to let my words fall to the ground.

About twelve, I went and paid my friends a visit, who were on shore, and spent two or three delightful hours in praising and blessing God.

Soon came another friend with two honest men from Gravesend, desiring me in the name of the minister to come and preach to them on the following Lord's day. At first I was unwilling to leave my own flock in the ship, but my friends' reasonings overbalanced mine, and I went on board, read public prayers, visited the sick, gave the soldiers an exhortation, (at which the soldiers were surprisingly affected;) and then took the boat

with them for Gravesend. My heart was much enlarged in intercession. The evening was exceeding calm, the sky clear, and all things conspired to praise that glorious and lofty One that inhabits eternity, who "stretcheth forth the heavens like a curtain, and holdeth the waters in the hollow of his hand."

About seven at night, God brought us safe to Gravesend, where Mr H. received both me and my friends most courteously, and loaded us with many benefits. The good Lord have mercy on him in that day.

We spent the evening very agreeably in prayer and singing, and then betook ourselves to sleep, having before exhorted one another to prepare our spices and ointments of praise and thanksgiving, and to rest on the approaching sabbath, according to the commandment.

Sunday, January 1. Blessed be God for the happy beginning of a new year! for it has been a day of fat things. We rose in the morning, and retired to an adjacent hill with my friends in prayer; and afterwards were most agreeably surprised with the coming of several more London friends, (whom I love as my own soul,) who came all night on the water to see me.

About ten we went to church, where I preached; and the curate was so kind, at our request, as to give us the sacrament.

In the afternoon I preached again to a more numerous congregation than in the morning. And being to stay there but one Lord's day, I was pressed to preach and read prayers a third time, at six in the evening. It was a thing I found entirely new; but, upon the curate's readily complying to lend the pulpit, and my friends and the people's importunity, I looked upon it as a call of Providence, and accordingly read prayers and preached to a very thronged auditory; and this I did without notes, having brought but two written sermons with me. Oh! who can express the loving-kindness of the Lord, or show forth all his praise?

Monday, January 2, 1737-8. Sat up till twelve at night, to take leave of some of my friends, whose busi-

ness obliged them to be at London the next morning; and then, after three or four hours rest, rose and walked to Greenhithe with the remainder of my friends, intending to take a boat there, and so return to my charge at Purfleet. But just as we were entering the boat, providentially came a boy, telling us the Whitaker was falling down to Gravesend, and ready to sail, if not actually under sail; we immediately hastened back from whence we came, and we went on our way rejoicing.

About eleven we reached Gravesend, and happily found the ship was not to sail till the morrow. This put gladness into my heart, as it gave me an opportunity of settling some affairs of consequence, and conversing a little longer with my dear friends.

About twelve o'clock I went on board, leaving my friends to dine on shore. And as I went along, God was pleased to show me he had given a blessing to my discourses; the people seemed greatly alarmed, and wished me heartily a good voyage, and the very sailors were surprisingly affectionate. Blessed be God for setting his seal to my unworthy ministry. Spent the remainder of the day in settling things on board, visiting the sick, teaching the children, and reading prayers, and preaching. All love, all glory be to God through Christ.

In the evening I went on shore to my friends, prayed, sung psalms, and expounded (I think) a chapter out of the holy scriptures to them, and was not a little comforted. Praise the Lord, O my soul!

Tuesday, January 3. Went on board, read prayers and preached, visited the sick, and then took a final leave, as I thought, of my friends. Spent the afternoon in writing letters and putting things in order. And (what I esteemed a great blessing) though I had been used to so large a sphere of action, yet my change of life gave me not the least uneasiness, but my heart was refreshed with joy unspeakable, and full of glory.

This evening began to read prayers between decks, judging it would be too cold above.

At night I went, according to custom, on shore to Gravesend, where I was agreeably surprised by seeing my friends. I took leave of them in the morning once more, the weather preventing their going to London. Here also Mr C. W. and Mr W. H. gave me the meeting, with whom we prayed, sang psalms, commended one another to God, and parted the next morning like Christian brethren.

Wednesday, January 4. Came on board at ten in the morning, but could not have public prayers, because the soldiers were engaged with their officer; but I visited the sick and perceived the soldiers were attentive to hear me, when I applied myself to those around the sick persons. I also distributed amongst the sick of my London friends kind presents, to convince them I had a love for, and to gain an access to their souls. I visited the sick, read prayers, and preached extempore (as I constantly do morning and evening) and went with Mr H. in the evening on shore to Gravesend, where we interceded for friends, expounded a chapter, and went to bed with that peace of mind which passeth all understanding. Oh, that the sensual, careless, half christian could but know the comforts of religion!

Thursday, January 5. This day God was with me of a truth, I was refreshed in spirit, by hearing from some London friends, and receiving some kind presents from persons I could never have thought of; was assisted much in writing letters, came on board, read prayers, and preached; visited the sick, and had God with me all day long; began to catechise six or seven of the young soldiers on open deck. I was surprised they would submit to it, but God has the hearts of all men in his hands.

Great civility was shown me on board by the officers, and captain W. sent his boat to fetch me to Gravesend, whither I went, having first visited the sick, read prayers, and preached on deck.

When on shore, I wrote several letters, expounded a chapter to a room full of people. Catechised the children of the house and three of my own companions,

and then went to bed full of peace and joy in the Holy Ghost.

My health of body, I could perceive increased, and my soul was much refreshed. I now began once more to feel the comforts of a retired life, and blessed God from my heart, that he had called me whither I was going.

Friday, January 6. About nine I came on board, read prayers, and preached between decks, and Mr H. sang a psalm, as he generally does. In the mean while, the ship loosed from Gravesend, and sailed by twelve o'clock to the Nore. We had a very brisk gale of wind.

God gave me great comfort, and I went between decks, and sat down on the ground, and read Arndt's "True Christianity;" and part of the time I stood upon deck, and admired the wonders of God in the deep.

Three or four were added to-day to my catechumens, some of whom I had great hopes of. Read prayers, preached upon deck near the stern, having no place for retirement, talked to the sailors on the fore-castle, wrote my journal, and climbed up into my cabin to bed, where my friend H. and I lay as comfortably as on a bed of state.

Some of the passengers, amongst whom was Mr H., began now to be sick; but I felt very little of it; on the contrary God enabled me to rejoice with exceeding great joy, my heart was warmed by talking to the sailors, and I was so lifted even above myself, that I could have watched unto prayer and praise all night.

I found that above a hundred, exclusive of the ship's company, were on board: God grant that not one of them may perish through my neglect.

Saturday, January 7. Breakfasted with some of the gentlemen in the great cabin, who were very civil, and let me put in a word for God.

Read public prayers, and began to expound the Lord's prayer to the soldiers by way of sermon, and

God enabled me to do it with power. After that I instructed my catechumens, who now amounted to twelve or thirteen. God made them soldiers of Christ as well as of the king.

Had an hour's conversation with a gentleman on board, on our fall in Adam, and the necessity of our new birth in Christ Jesus, and hoped it was not unpleasant to him.

To-day obtained what I prayed for, viz. a place to retire into; for captain W. on my bare mentioning my want of such a thing, offered me the free use of his own cabin, a place very commodious for that purpose.

Catechised those who went with me on open deck, for example to others, and found they improved. Captain W. the two cadets, and sergeants, sat very serious and attentive. But when the captain of the soldiers came, my heart sank a little, though without any reason; however I did not leave off. O, corruption thou art my sister!

Read public prayers, and finished my exposition of the Lord's prayer to the soldiers, at which they attended very orderly. At night I and my five companions went upon deck, and interceded and sang psalms, by which my heart was much enlarged. The weather was very cold, and the wind magnified that God, at whose word the stormy wind ariseth.

Now I fulfilled my promise to the Lord's people, and while the winds and storms were blowing over me, I made earnest supplications to God for them.

The ship continued at the Nore all this day; but I hope we made some advances towards eternity.

In the evening the wind blew very fresh indeed; and had our ship been in the Downs, we should have been in great danger. How wisely doth God provide for us! Most people began now to be sea-sick, particularly J. D. one of my companions was grievously afflicted.

Sunday, January 8. My friend H. and I have great reason to be thankful to God; for we slept as well as we could desire, though the wind blew very hard, and

the sailors were very busy in taking care of the ship, which by the morning had dragged her anchor two miles.

Went early and visited the sea-sick soldiers and their families between decks, gave them some sage-tea and sugar, &c., and excited them all to thankfulness and repentance, out of gratitude for their preservation from the last night's storm; and returned public thanks at morning prayers.

Thought much of my dear London friends; though absent in body, was present in spirit in sacred ordinances; and interceded for them and all mankind most fervently. Read public prayers and preached twice to the soldiers: and read prayers once in the great cabin to the officers, at their request, which I liked very well: catechised my own companions, but had not time to catechise the soldiers, on account of attending the sick.

To-day being the first Lord's day I have spent this long time in so private a manner, I could not avoid reflecting on the following lines:—

I sigh whene'er my musing thoughts
Those happy days present,
When I with troops of pious friends
Thy temple did frequent;

When I advanced with songs of praise,
My solemn vows to pay,
And led the joyful sacred throng
That kept the festal day.

But I considered it was the Divine Will that placed me here, and therefore I rejoiced. He is unworthy the name of a christian, who is not as willing to hide himself when God commands, as to act in a public capacity.

Began now to live a little by rule, and to examine into the interiors of those that came with me; which I found a most useful exercise both for them and me. Continued all this day at the Nore, being quite becalmed; and at night had a most comfortable intercession for all friends, &c.

Monday. January 9. Mr H. began to learn Latin.

Had near twenty catechumens with my own companions, who I believe made some advances.

Weighed from the Nore, and sailed before the wind in company with several others, which carried us on so briskly, that we anchored before Margate about one. Here I enjoyed a wished-for opportunity of writing to some of my London friends, and found my heart greatly enlarged towards them.

After dinner, having some necessaries to buy, Mr H. and I went on shore to Margate. The wind blew very fresh, and the sea raged horribly, but He that dwelleth on high was mightier, and kept us from the least fright, and filled me with great joy, and brought us safe on shore. We had the most abandoned man with us I ever saw, who came out of an East India ship: he had so much of the devil in him, that the very boat-men, profane as they were, abhorred him. From whence I infer, that were the devil himself to appear as he is, the wickedest sinners could not but detest him.

This afternoon I began to feel the power of faith more than ever I did before, and to find that as the day, so will our strength be. When I went into the boat the sea ran dangerously high; but I could boldly say:—

God is our refuge in distress,
A present help when dangers press;
In him undaunted we'll confide,
Though earth were from her centre tossed,
And mountains in the ocean lost,
Torn piecemeal by the roaring tide.

About five we got safe to Margate, where having received a little bodily refreshment, and recommended ourselves to God in prayer, we went about the town to buy the things we came for. The generality of the people we met with were civilized and teachable.

After we had done our secular business, we paid the curate a visit, the minister being at Canterbury. He received us most courteously. Our conversation was such as tended to the use of edifying; it ran chiefly

upon the great importance of the ministerial function; the necessity of preaching up the doctrine of the new birth; and the necessity and benefit of visiting from house to house.

About ten we left him, greatly refreshed in spirit, and thankful to God for exciting persons every where to entertain us.

On the morrow I sent him Mr Law's "Serious Call" and "Christian Perfection," with some other books; and also a few catechisms and sermons to some other serious people, whom Providence put in our way. Now, thanks be to God, saith the Apostle, which always causeth us to triumph in Christ, and maketh manifest the savour of his knowledge to us in every place!

Tuesday, January 10. About four this morning, Mr H. and I arose, intending to go on board immediately; but the wind blew so very violent, that by the advice of the boatmen we deferred going on board till daylight; and therefore, after we had kneeled on the shore and prayed for ourselves and others, we went back to the inn, and took that opportunity of writing to a friend or two.

About seven we took boat and praised and blessed God to see the floods clap their hands. About eight we came on board, and found we had great reason to be thankful that we were on shore last night. The sailors told us that the lightning shone on the sea all night; that the storm was very great, and the ship's long-boat was lost.

I read public prayers, returned public thanks for our deliverance, and expounded by way of sermon the second article of the creed, which I began yesterday. Did the same after evening prayers. Spent the remainder of the day in writing letters; and have not enjoyed a more calm delightful frame of mind a long time.

The sick increased on my hands, but were very thankful for furnishing them with sage-tea, sugar, broth, &c. At the sight of so many objects of pity, I was sensibly touched with a fellow feeling of their miseries. I could not but transverse the prodigal's complaint, how many

of my father's children are ready to perish with hunger, whilst I have enough and to spare.

Had a most comfortable sense of the Divine Presence with me in many particulars. And in the evening, joined in intercession with my other companions on deck, in behalf of absent friends and all mankind.

Wednesday, January 11. Weighed from Margate road, and cast anchor in the Downs, the ship sailing most pleasantly before the wind. Wrote several letters whilst the ship was under sail. Had my spirits mightily refreshed upon our arrival in the Downs, by hearing from two or three christian brethren at London; and was desirous to bless God for a providential opportunity that was offered of sending a whole packet to them and some other friends, to acquaint them how lovingly the Lord had dealt with me. O that the mercies bestowed on me may through the thanksgiving of many redound to the glory of God.

Had no public prayers this morning, being much hurried in writing letters to go by post; and when I went to read, the soldiers were engaged in their military affairs upon deck, so that I did nothing but visit the sick. I fear I did foolishly. Father, forgive me for thy dear Son's sake.

Went on in explaining the creed after evening prayers, and was enabled to talk of the crucifixion of our Lord: I believe it pricked them to the heart. O that I could hear them cry out, "what shall we do to be saved?"

Had the comfort to hear good was done among the soldiers; and the captain was pleased to express his approbation of my conduct. God grant I may with a single eye seek to please the captain of my salvation!

After evening prayers and visiting the sick, went ashore with Mr H. to Deal; and was so highly delighted with a prospect of the Downs, that we expressed our thankfulness in singing of psalms all the way. The boat-men I believe wondered at it at first; but they were not ashamed to blaspheme, and I thought had no reason to be ashamed to praise God. I had the satis-

faction before we got to Deal, to hear one of them join seriously with us ; and perceived a surprising alteration in their behaviour always after, blessed be God !

About five we got to Deal, and not knowing a single person, went (as at Margate) to pay my respects to the two ministers of the place : but finding neither of them at home, spent the remainder of the evening with my friend H. very comfortably in religious talk, family prayer, interceding for absent friends, and all mankind, and writing to christian brethren. And even here God did not leave my ministry without a witness ; for he was pleased to impress something I said on a poor woman's heart, that providentially came in and joined with us in family prayer : for which we endeavoured to thank him. Behold how great a fire this little spark kindled before we left Deal !

Thursday, January 12. Spent most of the morning in writing letters : went about eleven on board, and was highly delighted with the prospect on the Downs, which was exceedingly calm ; and a great many beautiful ships which were riding here, added to the prospect. O that men who occupy their business in the great waters, would (since they cannot but see) admire God's wonders in the deep !

Read prayers and went on explaining the creed to the soldiers ; visited and prayed with the sick ; and began this afternoon to explain the catechism to the women by themselves : I find they are in number about sixteen ; and, blessed be God, were much affected. Prosper thou, O Lord, this work of my hands upon me !

Had some religious talk with the surgeon of the soldiers, who seems very well disposed. I seldom (if ever) see him idle, and find he has many good qualities. God grant christianity may be grafted in him !

After evening prayers and expounding the creed, went again to Deal with Mr H. to buy some necessaries for our companions. Spent the remainder of the evening in writing letters, and reading and praying with eight or nine poor people, who came I suppose at the report of the other poor woman to hear me.

Friday, January 13. Remained all day on shore, the weather being too rough to go on board. Was in care about leaving my flock so long; but hope this short absence will make our meeting more agreeable to-morrow. Had the pleasure of joining in public worship at Deal, in a pretty chapel; which was more agreeable on account of our being confined for some time within the narrow limits of a ship.

Set apart this day as a day of humiliation, abstinence, and intercession for friends and all mankind, and found my heart greatly enlarged in that divine exercise. Intercession is a glorious means to sweeten the heart!

Spent the remainder of the day, and sat up till one in the morning in writing to friends.

Had two or three added to my company at night, who seemed very attentive, and prayed for me most heartily. The poor receive the gospel. I dispersed some books among them, as I saw proper. I hope God will give them his blessing.

Expected letters to-night from London, but was disappointed. God enable me in every thing to give thanks!

Fancied myself all this day in my little cell at Oxford: for I have not spent so many hours in sweet retirement since I left the university. The pleasure I felt was inexpressible.

Saturday, January 14. Spent the morning in writing letters, and was much pleased with the pious conversation of a poor woman, who was one of my auditors last night, and who, I believe, has passed through the pangs of the new birth.

Hasted on board about eleven, (the wind promising fair,) to take us out of the channel, and was affectionately received by the people.

I was greatly delighted to see all the ships sail together from the Downs. Nature, indeed, would have been glad to have staid till the morrow, that I might have received letters from my London friends, but God, I considered, ordereth all things for the good of those that love him, and therefore gave thanks from my heart.

Examined into the state of my little ones; (my friend H.'s charge,) and had reason to hope well of them.

Was enlarged in preaching after prayers to the soldiers, and spent two most pleasant hours in reading God's holy word. At night, though it was piercingly cold, we continued instant in intercession on deck; and the prospect of a clear sky, the stars glittering, and the moon shining bright warmed my heart, and made me greatly rejoice in spirit. I now began to be more reconciled to a ship life; for God gave me health of body, and, without which all is nothing, content of mind. Had near an hour's conversation with one who, I hope, will become an altogether christian. O that that blessed time would come.

Sunday, January 15. God gave me and Mr H. sweet sleep. Had near two hours' retirement in the captain's round house, and was much delighted with singing psalms on deck with my companions. Read public prayers in the cabin this morning, and was much enlarged in preaching to the soldiers on this article, "I believe in the Holy Ghost." In treating of which, I took occasion to show the nature and necessity of the new birth; a subject on which I delight to dwell.

Catechised the soldiers, and, blessed be God, find some of them improved. Was enlarged again in my evening sermon to the soldiers, and had prayers a second time in the great cabin, which gave me no small satisfaction; the officers, &c., willingly complied as soon as I imposed it; God be praised!

Had great delight in reading the holy scriptures, enjoyed an unspeakable peace of mind, and was much comforted in interceding for friends, &c., on deck. The weather was cold, and the wind blew very hard; but when the heart is full of God, outward things affect it little. Surely my friends in England pray for me; methinks I feel they do.

All the day the sea was entirely becalmed; every thing about us seem hushed and quiet, as though it would remind us of that sacred rest the day was set apart to commemorate. In the evening the wind blew

very fresh, but being full against us, we were obliged to sail back to the Downs (though we had got near fifty miles) where we arrived about twelve o'clock.

Monday, January 16. After private prayer, was most agreeably entertained with some letters from my London friends, which filled my soul with unspeakable pleasure, and caused me to shed tears of joy. If the correspondence of good people is so transporting here, O! how unspeakably ravishing must the personal communion of saints be hereafter. Hasten, O Lord, that blessed time, and let thy kingdom come.

Was a little affected by seeing a poor soldier tied neck and heels, for several mutinous words he had spoken. The captain related the case to me, and said, if I could make him sensible of his crime, I might beg him off. I endeavoured to do it, but, alas, in vain; he continued obstinate, and thereby hindered my design taking effect. After this, the captain ordered him to be tied down between decks; from whence I took occasion, in my morning sermon, to exhort the soldiers to obey them that had the rule over them, and to avoid those sins that would provoke God to command them to be tied hand and foot, and to be cast into outer darkness, where would be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

About twelve, a Deal boat coming alongside, I was minded to go on shore to answer my letters. The sea was very boisterous, but God brought us to shore rejoicing. O wherefore did I in the least fear? What am I, when left to myself?

It being the 16th day of the month, Mr H. and I joined in an hour's intercession and abstinence, with all those that meet together to bewail their own and the sins of the nation. About four, took some bodily refreshments; and from thence till one in the morning, continued answering my correspondents, having first spread their letters before the Lord in prayer, and begged that I might send them answers of peace.

Tuesday, January 17. Was awakened with an alarm that the ship was ready to sail, but found it soon contradicted. Spent an hour in particular intercession,

and the rest of the morning in writing letters, and teaching Mr H. Latin. O that I may be made an instrument of breeding him up for God!

Came on board about two in the afternoon, and found all things quiet in the ship, was most kindly received; and I observed the women were very attentive when I proceeded to explain the catechism to them. May God open their hearts as he did that of Lydia, that these may give diligent heed to the things that are spoken.

Was much enlarged in my evening discourse, and hope the word entered into their hearts. Was kindly invited by the post-master of Deal, to lie at his house. Gained an opportunity, by walking at night on deck, after intercession, to talk closely to the chief mate, and one of the sergeants of the regiment, and hope my words were not altogether spoken in vain. O that all men would come to the knowledge of the truth, and be saved!

Wednesday, January 18. Spent all the morning in retirement, reading the scriptures, public prayer, and preaching; the weather being extremely pleasant.

Began to live by rule more than ever, for nothing I find is to be done without it. All that had been sick being recovered, came to prayers, for whom I gave thanks, particularly to them. At the end of my sermon exhorting them with the utmost earnestness, to sin no more lest a worse evil should befall them, and to show forth their thankfulness, not only with their lips, but in their lives. O that there may be always in them such a mind!

Finished my exposition on the creed, read public prayers, and preached as usual in the afternoon. Catechised both my own companions and the soldiers; and was pleased to see many others very attentive to hear.

Had great comfort in reading the scriptures. Was afterwards a little inclined to heaviness, but drove it off by a long intercession. Prayer is an antidote against every evil.

Upon examination, had reason to hope my companions grew in grace; blessed be God for it!

About eleven at night went and sat down among the sailors in the steerage, and reasoned with them about righteousness, temperance, and a judgment to come, at which some of them almost trembled.

Thursday, January 19. Was much comforted by hearing from my friends. Began, after prayers this morning, to explain the catechism to the soldiers, and draw proper inferences by way of sermon. I find it is much approved of, and, for them, by far the fittest way of instruction.

Spent the afternoon in answering correspondents; was much assisted in my evening's exposition on the catechism, and had great hopes of two soldiers becoming christians indeed. Would to God all the king's soldiers were such!

Was enabled to compose a great part of a new sermon this evening. Enlarged in intercession, and afterwards much rejoiced by three more letters, and sat up till one in the morning to answer them. Whatsoever thou findest in thy hand to do, saith the wise man, do it with all thy might.

We had now such a calm and smooth sea, that all the people everywhere expressed their admiration of it. God grant that we may in a calm provide for a storm, and, like the primitive christians, when the churches had rest, walk in the comforts of the Holy Ghost, and be edified!

Friday, January 20. Rose with great peace of mind, spent all the morning in composing a sermon.

Happily composed a difference between a soldier and his wife, who were one of the four couple I married when first I came on board. The man had resolved to leave her, but upon my reminding him of his marriage vow, and entreating him with love, he immediately took to her again. What may not a minister do through Christ when his flock love him? Almost finished the sermon I began yesterday, blessed be God!

Went on in expounding the catechism after evening prayer; and now began to read the first lesson, which I purposely omitted before, not knowing they would

bear it, and willing to imitate Jacob, who was careful of his little ones not to over drive them.

Proposed to the captain to read a few prayers in the great cabin every night, which he really consented to, and withal said, he should be glad to hear me preach, whenever I should think proper.

Was surprised in the midst of my evening's discourse by the chief mate, who came and told me, that the minister of Upper Deal had sent a boat for me, desiring me immediately to come on shore. Accordingly, after I had concluded, Mr H. and I went and found the minister, which was left to officiate, who desired me, at the request of the inhabitants, to preach the Sunday following. After this, we retired to our lodging in Deal; and after a sermon and long intercession, was unspeakably comforted by the reception of several letters from persons, who, I believe, sincerely fear God; at which my heart was so full, that I could not but kneel down, pray, and return thanks to God for them.

Found the number of my hearers greatly increased to-night, and very joyful to see me once more on shore. I sat up till one in the morning, answering my correspondents, and then laid down, filled with such joy as no man could take from me, nor a stranger intermeddle with. Oh, that all men knew the comforts of religion.

Saturday, January 21. Spent all the day in writing letters, and delightful conversation with Mr H.

At night, the number of my hearers was so increased, that the stairs were full, as well as my room. I expounded to them the twenty-fifth of St Matthew, at which they were much affected, and seemed to love and pray for me most earnestly; and I desire to have no greater portion than the prayers of the poor.

Sat up till one, writing letters; gave thanks for the blessing of the week, and then lay down in peace, hoping to rise early the next morning, more fit for my master's service.

Sunday, January 22. About nine went on board with captain W., who is always extremely civil. Visited the sick, and read prayers in the cabin. Read prayers,

and preached my sermon on early piety, on open deck to the soldiers; the officers, and other gentlemen, attending very seriously. The weather was very cold, but preaching warmed my heart.

About noon went on shore with captain W. and Mr H. Dined at the postmaster's, who received us hospitably. Afternoon preached at Upper Deal, on Acts xxviii. 26. Many seemed pricked to the heart, and some so quickened, that they expressed a desire to follow me wherever I should go. O, free grace in Jesus Christ! I have scarce known a time I have preached any where, but I have seen some effect of my doctrine. From the hearts of the mighty, the word of the Lord hath not turned back, the sword of the spirit returned not empty. A proof this, I hope, that the words are not my own, but that God is with me of a truth. May I never, by pride and vain glory, provoke him to depart from me!

Stayed all night on shore, to expound the Lord's Prayer, and had a large company to hear me, and should have had seven hundred, as my hostess told me, would the house have held them: so swiftly ran the word of God and prevailed.

Was again refreshed by receiving five letters: sat up till past ten to answer some of them, and then went to rest, with comfortable reflections of God's unmerited loving-kindness to me.

Ten thousand thousand precious gifts,
My pious thanks employ;
Nor is the least a thankful heart
That tastes those gifts with joy.

Through all eternity, to God
My grateful song I'll raise,
But, oh! eternity's too short
To set forth all his praise!

Monday, January 23. Was much comforted by receiving five more letters; answered some of them; and about eleven in the morning, went on board the Amy, to pay my respects to colonel C., and to visit the soldiers, whom I looked upon as part of my charge. I was

received very civilly by the officers ; went among the soldiers, inquired into the state of their souls, gave them a word or two of exhortation ; promised to bring them some books, (I saw their wants,) and, at the officers' request, to come and preach to them, if opportunity should offer, before we left the Downs.

After this, I visited the Lightfoot, our other transport ship, in which were about twelve soldiers and a sergeant : they received me kindly. I sat down and conversed with them ; promised to send them some books, and to come and preach to them also, if Providence should permit. The Downs being exceeding calm, and the weather clear, going from ship to ship was very pleasant. Mine are but little flocks : O, that it may be my heavenly Father's good pleasure to give them the kingdom.

About two went again on board the Amy to dine with the officers, being kindly invited by them when I was before on board. They all treated me with great kindness, and in the midst of our meal was most agreeably surprised by the coming of two London friends, who made a journey from thence, O unmerited love, on purpose to see me.

Dinner being ended, I went and dispersed some books among the soldiers ; took my leave and hastened on board my own ship ; read prayers and preached, and then went on shore with my friends, not being a little rejoiced to see them.

January 23. This night God let me see greater things than before, for so many came to hear me that the poor landlady that owned the house where I lodged sent to her tenants, beseeching them to let no more come in for fear the floor should break under them ; and, indeed, there were such numbers, that I first expounded the creed to about eighty, and then the second lesson to as many more ; among whom I observed there were many of the chief inhabitants.

About eleven they went, and I then rejoiced with my friends for what God had done for my soul, eat a little food, interceded for absent friends, and all man-

kind, and went to bed about two in the morning. O, what shall I render unto the Lord for all the mercies he pours down upon me.

Tuesday, January 24. Spent all the morning in writing letters, walking, singing of psalms, and intercession all along the seashore, from whence we had a most delightful prospect of the Downs, which afforded me and my friends most noble matter for praise and thanksgiving. Met with a little opposition to-day; but I should have wondered, indeed, if such an effectual door had been opened for preaching Christ, and there had been no adversaries. Nothing has done more harm to the christian church than thinking the examples recorded in the holy scriptures, were written only to be read and not imitated by us

More people came to hear me to-night than ever, so that I divided them into two companies again, and providentially from the second lesson for the morning, had a glorious opportunity for showing the absolute unlawfulness of running or buying run goods, a sin that doth most easily beset the Deal people.

After exposition, paid Mr. E. a visit, who most kindly entertained us, and offered me his boat to go or come on shore when I pleased, which would save me much expense. After we returned from his house, we kneeled down on the seashore, and prayed for them that opposed themselves, and then went to bed, blessing and praising God.

Wednesday, January 25. Went on board in the morning with my friends, intending to read prayers and preach to the soldiers, but they were engaged about their own affairs, and I could not stay long.—Had great civilities showed us by the officers, &c., who treated my friends respectfully, and the captain, upon my request, pardoned a woman who otherwise was to have been sent on shore.

After breakfast, returned on shore with my friends, and read prayers, and preached at Upper Deal to a large congregation; I was surprised to see such a number of people, but all Deal seems to be in a holy flame,

and, were I prepared for it, I should see still greater things than these.

Dined at Mr R.'s, a grocer in Deal, with my friends; we were most hospitably entertained, and what was far better, had an excellent opportunity given me of discoursing for a considerable time on our fall in Adam, and the necessity of our new birth in Jesus Christ.

Expounded to two companies again at night the epistle for the morning, and the two lessons for the evening, as most suitable for the day, and was enabled to do it with power. More people came to night than before, so that they now did actually put a prop under the floor of the room. Was agreeably entertained with more letters, and though the duty of the day had a little fatigued me, yet God strengthened me to sit up till three in the morning, answering my christian correspondents. They that wait upon the Lord shall renew their strength.

Thursday, January 26. I had a visit paid me by an anabaptist teacher, who came to discourse with me about the things that belonged to the kingdom of God. By what I could find he was a spiritual man. I asked him several questions about taking the ministerial function, without being called as was Aaron; but he did not answer me to my satisfaction: however, we both agreed in this, that unless a man be born again, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.

I was much comforted by the coming of two more friends from London, with whom I took sweet comfort, and could not but fancy myself once more at London, being surrounded with religious intimates.

How sweet must their advantage be,
How great their pleasure prove,
Who live like brethren, and consent
In offices of love.

'Tis like refreshing dew, which does
On Hermon's top distill,
Or like the early drops that fall
On Zion's fruitful hill.

In the afternoon I took my friends on board, read prayers, and preached to the soldiers; after this, went on shore, sang psalms with my friends, and then expounded to the people, who now increased so much that I was obliged to divide them into three companies, and God enabled me to continue expounding three hours without any intermission, or the least weariness. Thanks be to God for his strengthening grace! As our day is, so shall our strength be.

Received three more letters, and sat up till one in the morning to answer some sent before, and then went to bed rejoicing and blessing God for the great things he had done for me. But withal desirous to say with the divine Herbert,

Less than the least of God's mercies shall be my motto still.

Friday, January 27. Spent the beginning of the morning in writing letters, then breakfasted with all my friends at one Mrs H.'s, a widow gentlewoman, who kindly invited, and as kindly entertained us. The Lord reward her a thousand fold.

About twelve I came on board, being unwilling to be absent from my proper charge long together. I was received kindly, visited the sick and catechised the soldiers, some of whom answered most aptly, for which I distributed amongst them all, something I knew would be agreeable. Oh! that I may catch them by a holy guile! but that power belongeth only unto God.

About two came a clergyman on board, from a neighbouring village to pay me a visit, with whom I spent an hour or two agreeably, had prayers on open deck, and enforced the duty of keeping holy the sabbath day, which then came in course to be explained, but was afraid to sing a psalm, Mr H. being at Deal with friends. Where was my courage then? Lord, what am I when left to myself?

At five returned ashore with the clergyman to whom I promised some books for his parishioners. Expounded three hours to three companies, as before. Glad tidings

of great joy sent me by four or five correspondents, sat up till one in the morning answering them, and then went to bed and had a feeling possession of my God. And will God in very deed, dwell in this heart of mine? O free grace in Christ! Praise the Lord, O my soul, and all that is within me praise his holy name!

Spent the morning most agreeably in conversation, intercession for all friends, and all mankind, walking on the seashore.

Dined with Mrs St. L., who hospitably entertained us. Went about three in the afternoon intending to go on board, but could not, which gave me a little uneasiness, thinking it by no means right to leave my flock so long.

At night I expounded to three companies more numerous than before. Received letters, and sat up till one in the morning answering them, and went to sleep in order to fit myself for the duties of the following sabbath.

Sunday, January 29. Went on board early in the morning, read prayers, and preached to the soldiers, and visited the sick; then returned on shore, and, accompanied with a troop of pious friends, hasted to Shrouliden church, about a mile and a half distant from Deal, where I preached to a weeping thronged congregation, at the request of the minister, who, at my request, gave me and my friends the blessed sacrament. Others staid also, to the number of sixteen; and, which I never observed before, the clerk pronounced a loud Amen to every person that received either bread or wine: an excellent custom, and worthy, in my opinion, to be imitated in all churches.

After this, I and my friends went on our way rejoicing, dined comfortably at Mr R.'s, and in the afternoon preached at Upper Deal. The church was quite crowded, and many went away for want of room; some stood on the leads of the church on the outside, and looked in at the top windows, and all seemed eager to hear the word of God. I preached against worldly-mindedness, and had great reason to think God gave it his blessing.

The weather was exceeding pleasant, and seeing the people go in such flocks over the fields, put me in mind of our blessed Lord's words, when he saw the people coming in companies from Samaria. The fields are white already to harvest. I then prayed that he would be pleased to enable me to gather wheat into his heavenly garner.

In the evening, such numbers came to hear me, that I was obliged to divide them into four companies; and God enabled me to expound to them from six till ten. Some would have persuaded me to have dismissed the last company without expounding, but I could not bear to let so many go empty away; and I find the more we do for God, the more we may. My strength held out surprisingly; I was but little, if at all fatigued; or if I had, I should have been sufficiently recompensed by some letters, which I received from my dear friends, which gave me unspeakable satisfaction; and after I had perused them, I took a little refreshment, rejoiced and gave thanks with my friends for the blessings of the day, and went to our respective beds about twelve at night. Oh! who can express the loving-kindness of the Lord, or show forth all his praise?

Monday, January 30. At the request of the inhabitants, and the leave of Mr R., who sent from Canterbury a most obliging message, I preached again at Upper Deal to as crowded and attentive an audience as I had yesterday; and afterwards, I, with Mr H., waited upon the rev Mr W., who read prayers, and most courteously invited me to come and see him. Our conversation ran chiefly on the expediency of baptizing infants at church. I continued with him about an hour, and then, at his request, visited a poor woman of the parish, who was grievously troubled in mind, and God was pleased to bless my ministry to her comfort. To him be all the glory!

So poor, so frail an instrument,
If thou, my God, vouchsafe to use,
'Tis praise enough to be employ'd,
Reward enough if thou excuse.

If thou excuse, then work thy will,
By so unfit an instrument ;
It will, at once, thy goodness show,
And prove thy pow'r omnipotent.

Soon after this we went to Mr R.'s, where our friends expected us; but we had not been long there, before the wind shifted about on a sudden, and a cry came, the wind is fair, prepare yourselves for sailing. I received the news with an humble joy; but sorrow, I perceived, filled the hearts of my dear friends, who came from London to see me. We immediately retired, intending to intercede for all mankind before we parted, but the people were in such a hurry, for fear the sea should grow too tempestuous to go off, that we were obliged to be very brief. Having, therefore, recommended ourselves to God, I took my leave; but oh, what affection did the Deal people express to my unworthy person! for no sooner were they apprized of the wind being fair, than they came running in droves after me to the seashore, wishing me good luck in the name of the Lord; and with tears, and other expressions of kindness, praying for my success and safe return. I was confounded with a sense of God's mercies to me.

The sea was very boisterous indeed, and the waves rose mountains high; but God was pleased to give Mr H. and me an unusual degree of faith, and we went on singing psalms and praising God, the water dashing in our faces all the way. Doubtless we were in jeopardy, but wherefore should we fear, having so many on shore praying for us?

About five we came on board, and were received with joy, for the ship was under sail, and the people were afraid I should be left behind. As I was going into the great cabin, I fell down the steerage stairs, but received little or no hurt. After we had sailed for a short time, the man of war not moving, we cast anchor again. Mr H. was so sick by the ship's motion after we came on board, that he was obliged to go to bed.

Tuesday, January 31. Spent the morning in writing

letters, visiting the sick, reading prayers, and preaching to the soldiers.

About twelve was pleasingly surprised with another sight of my London friends, who stayed at Deal all night, and finding the ship did not sail, came with some more Deal friends to take me on shore, that I might bid them once more farewell. I was a little unwilling at first, but by their importunity and affectionate entreaties they even compelled me. I accordingly went with them, singing psalms and praising God all the way.

But I had scarce been on shore an hour before the man of war gave a signal for sailing; and so we were obliged to hasten back on board. The people expressed much joy at seeing me come to Deal again, and accompanied me to the seashore, as before.

The weather being fair, we went on board with pleasure. The ship was under sail, but we met with it, and were received affectionately. I hope that these frequent and sudden removes will put me in mind that I have here no continuing city; and stir me up to live so holily, that were God at any time to say, "This night shall thy soul be required of thee;" I might with pleasure say, "Lo I come."

Another thing I could not but reflect on yesterday, when I saw Deal all in a confusion when the wind shifted about so suddenly, some crying for one thing, some another, but all anxious lest their ship should sail without them. Alas! what confusion, thought I, will the inhabitants of the world be in, when in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, they shall hear the voice of the archangel and trump of God, crying aloud, Arise, ye dead, and come to judgment!

After I was on board, I preached, read prayers to the soldiers, visited the sick, wrote some letters, and interceded for all mankind on deck, and retired to bed about twelve.

Our ship sailed briskly for a few hours; but the wind shifting again, was obliged to return back once

more, and we cast anchor in the Downs about nine at night.

After this, I went cheerfully about my ministerial business, visited the sick, read prayers and preached to the soldiers, answered some letters I had received in the morning.

Sent some books for the soldiers on board the Lightfoot; and at night went on shore at Deal with Mr H., where we were most kindly received, and courteously entertained and lodged at Mr R.'s. The Lord reward him a thousand fold!

Did nothing that night, it being late, save that I visited a sick person at her earnest desire and the minister's consent, and talked about half an hour on the benefit of afflictions.

Answered two or three letters I received after I came on shore, prayed with some well-disposed people that were at Mr R.'s, and about twelve went to bed.

Thursday, February 2. Rose early in the morning, went on board in Mr E.'s boat, intending to read prayers and preach to the soldiers, and then return to Upper Deal to preach there, being asked to do so by the inhabitants and the minister.

About ten o'clock there sprung up a pleasant fair gale, which carried us from the Downs near forty miles that day; during which time I read prayers, preached to, and catechised my soldiers, wrote some letters, and had an opportunity of sending them as we sailed by Dover, for which I was desirous to bless God.

Any one must needs think I should have been glad to have heard from Mr Wesley,* as he went by Deal; but I considered God ordered all things for the best and therefore I now joyfully went, but not knowing whither I went, and doubted not but he that strengthened David when he went out against Goliath, would also strengthen me against all my spiritual adversaries, and send his Holy Ghost to guide, assist, and comfort me in all emergencies. The good Lord keep me always thus minded!

* He came from Georgia to England, just as Mr Whitefield left it

Friday, February 3. Let this day be noted in my book, for God wrought for us a wonderful deliverance! About seven in the morning, the men upon deck not keeping a good look out, one of the East India ships in shifting to the wind ran near us so very briskly, that had not captain W. providentially been on deck, and beseeching them for God's sake to tack about, both the ships must inevitably have split one against another. They were within four yards of each other. The captain said he never was in so great danger in his life. God so ordered it, that Mr H. and I knew nothing of it till it was over; but when I was apprized of it I endeavoured to excite all to thankfulness, and returned public thanks at prayers. Too many seemed to be insensible of the mercy received. But,

Since God does thus his wond'rous love
Thro' all our lives extend,
Those lives to him let us devote,
And in his service spend.

Read public prayers and preached to the soldiers as usual, explained the catechism to the women, exhorted them particularly to be obedient to their own husbands, which they had lately been wanting in; and was pleased to hear the captain, as I came on deck, remind me of the motion I made to him some time ago, about having prayers daily in the great cabin, and withal desired that from henceforward I would read prayers morning and evening to them. This I most readily consented to, it being what I had long desired and prayed for, and what I was just then about to propose to him again. Accordingly I went immediately and acquainted the lieutenant, &c. of the captain's desire, and we began this night to have full public prayers; and at the request of captain W., I expounded the second lesson, and a glorious lesson it was. Blessed be God! for that I hope we shall now begin to live like christians, and call upon the name of the Lord daily. The very thoughts of God's granting me this petition filled me with joy.

Saturday, February 4. Began to have prayers in

the great cabin in the morning, read prayers and preached twice to the soldiers as usual; and expounded the second lesson in the evening to the gentlemen, after prayers in the great cabin, which from henceforth I intended, God willing, to continue. Unspeakable I find is, and will be the benefit of it, for it gives me an opportunity of saying many salutary truths, and affords us matter for serious table talk afterwards.

Was much pleased to see our ship sail directly before the wind, was enlarged in intercession, furnished three soldiers with books, who began to-day to learn to read. God enabled them not only to read, but to do their duty!

Mr H.'s scholars increase. The Lord increase his strength!

Sunday, February 5. Joined in spirit with absent friends in holy ordinances, spent some time most delightfully in reading the word of God; read prayers, and made some observations on both the lessons in the great cabin, and then read prayers and expounded both the lessons to the soldiers. O that the Lord would open our understandings! for they are but a dead letter without the illumination of his holy spirit!

Read prayers and preached my sermon on justification in the afternoon to the officers, &c. in the great cabin.

Began to night to turn the observations made on the lessons in the morning, into catechistical questions, and was pleased to hear some of the soldiers and my companions make such apt answers. I find this an excellent way of instruction; it makes them bring their Bible, and give diligent heed to the things that are spoken; it teaches them the scriptures practically, and consequently will by the divine blessing make them wise unto salvation. Thanks be to God for putting this into my heart! By his assistance I intend to continue it.

Monday, February 6. Had no prayers in the morning between decks, but read prayers in the cabin; likewise did the same in the evening, and expounded the

fourteenth chapter of St Matthew, the second lesson, which containing an account of St John's reproof of Herod, gave me an opportunity of telling them, that great men should not be angry if ministers should reprove them out of love, and they seemed to assent to it.

Read prayers and preached to the soldiers as usual, interceded warmly for absent friends and all mankind, and went to bed full of peace and joy. Thanks be to God for this unspeakable gift!

Was pleased to see Mr H. so active in teaching the children. He has now many scholars. May God prosper the works of his hands upon him!

Had such pleasant sailing, that captain W. said he never knew the like before. What reason have I to be thankful! O that my friends would help me to give thanks.

Tuesday, February 7. Read prayers and expounded the lessons as usual to the soldiers, and in the great cabin, and after dinner sang psalms with Mr H. and a gentleman on board, on open deck.

Being now in the bay of Biscay, the ship rocked very much, though there was a great calm; but if there be a fixed principle of grace, a firm love of God rooted in the heart; what avail all outward motions?

Wednesday, February 8. Had public worship and expounded as usual to both my congregations. Was pleased to hear a gentleman discourse for some time of the utter inability of any thing to make us happy but God.

In the afternoon I preached and read prayers on open deck, at the captain's desire, who ordered chairs to be brought, and boards put across them for the soldiers to sit upon. My subject was, the eternity of hell torments, and I was earnest in delivering of it, being desirous that none of my dear hearers should experience them. Praying and singing psalms on open deck enlarged my heart.

Was enabled to make good part of a sermon this evening, and lay down to sleep. God grant I may die daily!

Thursday, February 9. Read prayers, expounded and catechised as usual, had delightful sailing, and great joy in the Holy Ghost, and was very thankful that God called me abroad to see and admire his wonders in the deep. O who can serve a better master than Jesus Christ?

Friday, February 10. Read prayers, and according to custom went on in explaining the catechism to the women; and after evening prayer expounded the forty-ninth psalm instead of the lesson. Had still greater reason to bless God for bringing me to sea. O what shall I render unto the Lord?

Saturday, February 11. Catechised, visited the sick, expounded and read prayers as usual, and met with some soldiers who could sing by note, with whom I propose to join in divine psalmody every day.

A psalm may win him who a sermon flies,
And turn delight into a sacrifice.

In the evening gave thanks for the blessings, and examined into the actions of the past week. It is well I have a Saviour to satisfy for my performances as well as my person, for otherwise how should I stand before thee, O holy Lord God? God be merciful to me a sinner.

Sunday, February 12. Did as usual, and preached my sermon on glorification to the gentlemen in the great cabin. Oh, that God may make us partakers of it.

Honest Joseph, my servant, returned thanks after morning prayer, for his recovery from a late severe fit of sickness. I hope now Christ has touched him by the right hand of his healing power, he will arise and minister unto him. He tells me he can say with David, it is good for me that I have been afflicted. God be praised! for sanctified afflictions are signs of special love.

Monday, February 13. Did as usual, only instead of the second lesson, expounded the twenty-second chapter of St Matthew, at the captain's request, who

takes all opportunities to express his kindness to me : may the God whom I serve, sanctify and save him.

Tuesday, February 14. May I never forget this day's mercies, since the Lord was pleased to deal so lovingly with me ! About twelve at night a fresh gale arose, which increased so very much by four in the morning, that the waves raged horribly indeed, and broke in like a river on many of the poor soldiers, who lay near the main hatchway. Friend H. and I knew nothing of it, but perceived ourselves restless, and could not sleep at all ; he complained of a grievous head-ach. I arose and called upon God for myself and those that sailed with me, absent friends and all mankind. After this I went on deck, but surely a more noble, awful sight my eyes never yet beheld ! for the waves rose more than mountains high, and sometimes came on the quarter-deck. I endeavoured all the while to magnify God, for thus making his power to be known ; and then creeping on my knees (for I knew not how to go otherwise) I followed my friend H. between decks, and sang psalms and comforted the poor wet people. After this I read prayers in the great cabin ; but we were obliged to sit all the while. Then thinking I should be capable of doing nothing, I laid myself across the chair reading ; but God was so good, so to assist me by his spirit, that though things were tumbling, the ship rocking, and persons falling down unable to stand, and sick about me ; yet I never was more cheerful in my life, and was enabled though in the midst of company, to finish a sermon before I went to bed, which I had begun a few days before. So greatly was God's strength magnified in my weakness ! Praise the Lord, O my soul, and all that is within me praise his holy name !

Thursday, February 16. Did as usual in the ship, only instead of catechising, examined into the proficiency of my friend H.'s scholars, gave them proper encouragement, as I saw they wanted ; and had hopes some of them would become living members of Jesus Christ.

Joined with those at night, who set apart this day as a day of fasting and humiliation, to deprecate the judgments our national sins deserve. Lord hear our prayers, and let our cry come unto thee.

Friday, February 17. Read prayers, expounded the lessons and proceeded on my explanation of the catechism to the women: expounded part of the Lord's Prayer, after evening prayer, in the great cabin; and intend after this is done, to go on with the Creed and Ten Commandments. God give us all praying, believing, obedient hearts.

Found honest Mr D. particularly useful to me, I being a little sick by the late shaking of the ship, and the heat and smell of the people between decks, who, as yet, have scarce had time to recover themselves since the storm. O how soon are these frail tabernacles of ours put out of order! happy the man who serves God in his health, and has nothing to do when sickness seizes him, but quietly to lie down and die.

Saturday, February 18. Performed the usual duty, and finished the Lord's Prayer. Perceived my bodily disorders to go off, and was enabled to preach to the soldiers with more enlargement than I have been for these four days past. The captain observed me a little disordered, and gave Mr H. a cordial for me. The good Lord note this favour in his book.

After dinner I grew better and better, was exceedingly delighted by sitting on deck, praising God for the pleasantness of the weather, and reading archbishop Cranmer's life: surely he was a righteous man. The account of his fall made my heart tremble within me. But why shouldest thou be cast down, O my soul? Still trust in God: he that has begun will carry on and finish the good work. Even so, Lord Jesus come quickly.

Though the weather was exceeding pleasant all the day, yet it grew more and more pleasant in the evening, and our ship sailed at the rate of nine miles an hour, and as steady as though we were sitting on shore. The night was exceeding clear, and the moon and stars

appeared in their greatest lustre ; so that not having patience to stay below, I went upon deck with friend H. and praised God for his wonderful loving-kindness in singing psalms, and gave thanks for the blessings, and asked pardon for the offences of the week, and then had a long intercession. God grant I may learn a lesson from this good providence of God ; and the nearer I come to my journey's end, the quicker may my pace be.

It is worth coming from England, to see what we have beheld this day. God be praised for all his mercies.

Sunday, February 19. Slept better to night than I have a long while, blessed be the keeper of Israel. Read prayers in the great cabin, was enlarged in expounding both the lessons to the soldiers, and had prayers, and preached one of the sermons God enabled me to make since I came on board, on open deck in the afternoon. All the gentlemen attended, benches were laid for the people, and the ship sailed smoothly, and the weather was finer than I can express ; so that I know not where I have performed the service more comfortably. And, indeed, I have been so delighted these two days with our pleasant sailing, and the promontories all around us, that I could not avoid thanking God for calling me abroad, and stirring up all to praise him : who by his strength setteth fast the mountains, and is girded about with power.

For these two days our ship has sailed at the rate of a hundred and sixty miles in twenty-four hours, and rode in triumph directly before the wind, and cast anchor about two in the morning ; till which time, I sat up on purpose to give thanks in Gibraltar haven. Oh, that my friends would therefore praise the Lord for his goodness, and extol him for the wonderful works he doth for me, the least of the sons of men.

How Providence will be pleased to dispose of me here, I cannot yet know ; but I thought proper to send you this account of my short voyage already, to show you how God has heard your prayers, to provoke you

to thankfulness, and to encourage you to persevere in praying on my behalf. If you observe, as doubtless you may, any thing amiss or imprudent in my conduct, I beseech you by the mercies of God in Christ Jesus, tell me plainly ; for, for that cause have I been so particular. And if you should happen to see any thing commendable or praiseworthy in my behaviour, oh, do not think more highly of me than you ought to think, for I am a worm, and no man, and deserve to be the outcast of the people ; but give all glory to my best master, by whose free grace I am what I am.

I cannot help transcribing the verses that follow, as a conclusion to what I have now sent you.

How are thy servants bless'd, O Lord !
How sure is their defence !
Eternal wisdom is their guard ;
Their help, Omnipotence.

Think, O my soul, devoutly think,
How with affrighted eyes
Thou saw'st the wide extended deep
In all its horrors rise !

Confusion dwelt in ev'ry face,
And fear in ev'ry heart ;
When waves on waves, and gulf on gulf,
O'ercame the pilot's art.

Yet then from all my griefs, O Lord !
Thy mercy set me free ;
Whilst in the confidence of prayer,
My soul took hold on thee.

For though in dreadful whirls we hung
High on the broken wave ;
I knew thou wert not slow to hear,
Nor impotent to save.

The storms were laid, the wind retired,
Obedient to thy will :
The sea, that roar'd at thy command,
At thy command was still.

In midst of dangers, fears, and death,
Thy goodness I'll adore ;
And praise thee for thy mercies past,
And humbly hope for more.

My life, if thou preserv'st my life,
Thy sacrifice shall be ;
And death, if death shall be my doom,
Shall join my soul to thee.

PART II.

FROM GIBRALTAR TO SAVANNAH.

My dear Friends,

THOUGH I know no reason why you should be solicitous about any thing that happens to such a dead dog as I am, yet as your love, (oh, unmerited kindness,) abounds exceedingly towards me, I am positive you will give thanks unto our good God for all the mercies he had conferred upon me ; therefore have I sent you as full and particular an account of the remainder of my voyage, as the little leisure I have had from my ministerial offices would permit me to give.

Monday, February 20, 1737. Spent the morning on board, in writing letters to my dear friends in England to acquaint them of my safe arrival. Went in the afternoon on shore to Gibraltar, and was unspeakably delighted with the prospect of the place. My friend H. and I dined at an inn, and afterwards with captain W. and some other company, to view one side of the fort, which to us seemed impregnable ; and at the sight of it I could scarce avoid crying out, who is so good a God as our God ?

The seeing persons of all nations and languages gave me great pleasure, and the difference of the value of

their money and ours, gave me occasion to reflect on the stupidity of those who place their happiness in that which has no intrinsic worth in itself, but only so much as we arbitrarily put upon it.

Went into a Romish chapel, wherein were the relics of a vast deal of pageantry, and several images of the Virgin Mary, dressed up, not like a poor Galilean, but in her silks and damasks. Oh, thought I, who hath bewitched this people, that they should thus depart from the simplicity of Christ, and go a whoring after their own inventions? Surely, were the great St Paul to rise from the dead, and come and view the Romish church, his spirit would be stirred up with him, as it was at Athens, to see them thus wholly given to idolatry.

Tuesday, February 21. After having read prayers, and written some more letters to my friends in England, went again to Gibraltar, to pay my respects to governor S. being told by captain M. that he expected to see me. The worthy old gentleman, like Sergius Paulus, received me with the utmost candour, and gave me a general invitation to come and dine with him every day, during my stay at Gibraltar. I thanked him for his kindness, had about a quarter of an hour's conversation with him, and took my leave for that time.

At one o'clock I returned to dine with him, according to his appointment, and was well pleased with the regular behaviour of the officers at table. We had what an Epicurean would call *cœna dubia*. At three I took my leave, and walked about with captain W. and other friends, to take a second view of the fort; went on board about five, read prayers, and began expounding the creed in the cabin; wrote some more letters, and went to bed, very thankful to God for sending me aboard.

Wednesday, February 22. This day I intended to stay on board to write letters, but God being pleased to show me it was not his will, I went again on shore, and paid both the ministers of Gibraltar a visit, who received me very affectionately, and offered me the

use of the pulpit. Oh, what a blessed thing it is for the clergy to dwell together in unity!

At eleven went to public prayers, and was much pleased to see many officers and soldiers attend the general to church. Methinks religion looks doubly amiable in a soldier.

After prayers, dined again with the general, who gave me another particular invitation, as I went out of the church. He treated me with uncommon civility, and desired me to preach the following Sunday.

Had an opportunity of sending a packet of letters with my journal to my dear friends in England. May the good Lord give them his blessing!

Went in the afternoon to visit a deserter, who had sent me a letter, desiring me to intercede for him with the governor, he being apprehensive he should die for desertion; I intended to answer his request, but the governor was so merciful that he ordered him to be whipped only, which I thought punishment little enough. O sin, what mischief dost thou make in the world!

In the evening returned as usual on board, read prayers, and expounded in the great cabin, buried a child, made an exhortation to the soldiers proper for the occasion, wrote to some friends at Deal, and went to bed with unusual thoughts and convictions that God would do some great things at Gibraltar. Oh, that I were a pure vessel fit for my master's use!

Thursday, February 23. Continued all this day on board, did my usual duty in the ship, and put my dear friend B.'s sermon into the hands of two officers at Gibraltar, who came to dine on board with lieutenant D. They behaved very much like gentlemen, and seemed pleased with serious conversation. May the God whom I serve add the christian to the gentleman!

Friday, February 24. Blessed be God who this day hath shown me that he hath heard my prayer, and not taken his loving-kindness from me! Long before I reached Gibraltar, I prayed that God would open an

effectual door, at the place whither we were going, and direct me where I should lodge; and lo, this day he has answered me.—About ten in the morning comes capt. M. on board, telling me that one major S. (a person I never saw) had provided me a convenient lodging at one merchant B.'s, and desired that I would come on shore. I looked upon this as a call from Providence, received it with all thankfulness, and went with friend H. on shore, but not without first praying that God would direct us how to behave.

About the middle of the town major S. gave us the meeting, conducted us to our new lodgings (which were very commodious) and engaged us to dine with him and captain M. When I sent you without scrip or shoe, lacked ye any thing? and they said, nothing, Lord!

About eleven was introduced by doctor C. to general C. who was desirous of seeing me. He received me exceeding kindly, and after a little serious conversation, we went to the governor S.'s, from thence to public prayers, and I was highly pleased to see so many officers attending on the general to church. Doctor C. told me he had not known governor S. absent himself from prayers once these several years except when he was hindered by real sickness. O, that all others would let their light so shine before men!

Retired in the evening to our lodgings, had family prayer, wrote some few religious letters, and spent nearly half an hour in serious conversation with the people of the house, gave thanks for the blessings of the day, and was soon convinced that God had sent me that particular lodging of a truth. Be careful for nothing, but on every (even the minutest) thing, make your wants known unto God. For he careth for you.

Saturday, February 25. About six this morning went with friend H. to the church to pray with some devout soldiers, who I heard used to meet there at that time, and with whom my soul was knit immediately. For all my delight is in the saints that are in the earth, and in those that excel in virtue.

After we had finished our devotion, I made an inquiry into their state, and found that their society had been subsisting about twelve years, and that one sergeant B. (a devout soldier indeed) now amongst them was the first beginner of it. At first they told me they used to meet in dens and mountains and caves in the rocks; but afterwards upon their applying for leave to build a little place to retire in, doctor C. and governor S. gave them the free use of the church, where they constantly meet three times in a day, to read, pray, and sing psalms, and at any other season when they please. They have met with contempt, and are now in derision called, the new lights. A glorious light they are indeed. For I conversed closely with several of them, and they made me quite ashamed of my little proficiency in the school of Christ. Many have joined with them for a time, but a servile fear of man, that bane of Christianity, made them draw back. However, some continue steadfast and immovable, and though despised by the world, are no doubt highly favoured of God. Governor S. countenances them much, and has spoken of them often to me with respect. Blessed be God, even the father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath not left himself without witness in any place, but hath some every where, who serve him and work righteousness.

The Sunday before we came hither, I was telling my friend H. that I had reason to think, by what had happened to me, that God had some work for me to do at Gibraltar; he answered that there could not much good be expected from among soldiers. I replied—no doubt God has some secret ones in all places, who tremble at his word. And lo he hath this day brought me to them. By this I know thou favourest me, O Lord, thou King of saints.

There is also another society of the Scotch church, who in contempt are called dark lanterns. It has subsisted about a year, and is made up of many serious Christians, as I was informed. I did not think it agreeable to visit them, but I sent them, as well as the

other society, some proper books; had religious talk with several of them, and endeavoured to unite both societies together. Oh, when will that time come, when all differences about externals shall be taken away, and we all with one heart and one mouth glorify our Lord Jesus Christ.

About eight returned to my lodgings, and after having written some letters, went on board the Amy to marry a couple who sent to me yesterday to come and celebrate their nuptials. I took that opportunity of exhorting them all to take heed to the things that belong to their peace. Some, I believe, were affected, but the generality of them behaved so carelessly, that I could not but see a difference between those that have a minister and those that have not.

About twelve went on board my own ship, dined, did some necessary business, read prayers, gave my flock a warm exhortation, and returned about five on shore, where I spent nearly two hours with the devout soldiers in the church. Many of them conversed most spiritually, and seemed well acquainted with the pangs of the new birth. May God perfect the good work begun in their hearts! O how amiable are thy servants, O Lord of Hosts! How would the world admire them did they see their beauties! But Satan does now as formerly dress them in bears' skins in order to have them baited.

Sunday, February 26. Between five and six in the morning went with Mr H. (which I did all the while I was at Gibraltar) and sang psalms, prayed and expounded the lessons to the devout soldiers in the church, and was much enlarged. Thanks be given unto thee, O Lord.

Intended to go and preach to my people; was prevented by the violence of the wind; but was pleased to hear from some Gibraltar officers, who dined that day on board the Whitaker, that some of my flock had the courage to read prayers and sing psalms themselves, and (as I found afterwards) continued so to do, during my absence from them. Blessed be God! I hope I

shall have some that dare be singularly good, and will not be kept out by the press.

Preached in the morning at Gibraltar, before such a congregation of officers and soldiers as I never before saw. The church, though very large, was quite thronged. And God was pleased to show me, that he had given extraordinary success to my sermon. O how is the divine strength magnified in my weakness! O grant I may like a pure crystal transmit all the light thou pourest upon me; and never claim as my own what is thy sole property!

Dined with friend H. at governor S.'s, who sent most kindly to invite us. The law at his table was the same with that of Ahasuerus, "No one was compelled." And all the officers behaved in such a decent, innocent manner every time I dined there, that they pleased me very much. Surely some fear of God is in that place!

After evening prayers (for there is no sermon in the afternoon) I went and expounded, prayed and sang psalms with the society, and had nearly thirty hearers. May the good Lord give it his blessing.

At night had some devout conversation with my host and hostess, who seemed to love me as their own son; prayed for absent friends, and went to bed ashamed I had done so little for God on a sabbath-day. But when we cannot do as we would, we must do as we can.

Monday, February 27. Went to the church, and did as yesterday: and was visited afterwards by two of the Nonconforming society, who seemed to be Israelites indeed. I exhorted them to love and unity, and not to let a little difference about a few externals occasion any narrow-spiritedness to arise in their hearts. I advised them to come and hear me expound in the church, which they did; and providentially the lesson was the 4th of the Ephesians, from whence I took occasion to urge on them the necessity of loving one another with a catholic disinterested love; to be of one heart and one mind, and to join without respect of persons in hastening the kingdom of our Lord Jesus Christ. I hope

God gave a blessing to what was said. For I observed they came constantly afterwards, and was told there was a perfect harmony between them. What infinite mischief have needless divisions occasioned in the christian world! "Divide et impera," is the devil's motto.

Dined and supped at general C.'s with Mr H., and was received most courteously. The Lord reward him in that day! The officer seemed studious to oblige me, and to be solicitous for my stay at Gibraltar. But my face was set to go towards Georgia. The Lord direct my going in his way.

Tuesday, February 28. Expounded in the church as usual; went on board, read prayers and expounded to my own flock; dined with friend H. at governor S.'s, who sent to invite us; and expounded to a large number of soldiers in the evening at church.

Was asked by doctor C. in the name of the governor, colonel C., to preach every prayer day whilst I stayed at Gibraltar, which I promised to do, and perceived the word of God to run very swiftly. Many of the inhabitants pressed me to stay with them, and were exceeding kind to those who were with me, for my sake. Blessed be God for thus giving me favour in his people's sight! Lord, what am I, or what is in me, that thou shouldest thus so highly honour me? Grant, O Lord, the more thou exaltest me, the more I may abase myself, and always be looking to the rock from whence I was hewn!

Conversed with one of the devout soldiers, who was under strong spiritual trials; and God was pleased to give him comfort. I find it necessary more and more every day, that ministers should be tempted in all things like unto their brethren, that they may be able experimentally to succour those that are tempted.

Wednesday, March 1. Expounded in the morning, and was highly pleased at my entrance into the church, to see several soldiers kneeling in several parts of the house of God at their private devotions. O happy Gibraltar, that hast such a set of praying men! Some I hear often come in by two o'clock in the morning, to

pour out their hearts before God The Lord perform all their petitions!

Preached according to my promise, to a numerous and affected audience of officers, soldiers, &c. Dined (at his invitation) at governor S.'s, and expounded at night to near two hundred people, amongst whom were many of the officers, and of the honourable women not a few. O, that they may with meekness receive the engrafted work, and that it may be a means of saving their souls!

Thursday, March 2. Spent part of the day in writing letters. Dined and supped at Mr A.'s, chief civil magistrate in Gibraltar, and was entertained with uncommon love and affection.

Expounded twice in the church, as usual, and at night had above three hundred hearers; amongst whom were many officers, ladies, and doctor C. the minister of the church, himself, who would have had me gone up into the reading desk, that I might have the greater command of the people; but I declined it that night. God be praised for sending me abroad, and prospering the work of his hands upon me.

When all thy mercies, O my God,
My rising soul surveys;
Transported with thy love, I'm lost
In wonder, joy, and praise!

Friday, March 3. Still God lets me see greater things than before. O, that my thanks may increase proportionably!

This morning, besides a great number of the soldiers, near, if not more than a dozen of the town's people came to church to hear me expound. Afterwards we breakfasted with a gentlewoman, who sent by major S. to invite us, and most gladly received us into her house. About ten I preached my sermon against swearing, and made a farewell application to the soldiers that were going over to Georgia out of that garrison. The governor had that morning reviewed them; and as I could not be in the same ship with them, I desired they

might be ordered to come to church, that I might have an opportunity of telling them how to behave in that land which they were going over the sea to protect. The colonel and governor most readily consented ; there was a most thronged audience, and God was pleased to set his seal to my sermon. Many officers and soldiers wept sorely, and a visible alteration was observed in the garrison for some days after. O, that their convictions may end in their conversion, and that they may bring forth the fruits of the spirit?

Bought some wine out of the money which I had collected for the use of the sick poor in Georgia. The parsonage-house ought to be the poor's storehouse.

Had above five hundred to hear me expound this evening, and went up into the desk, by the advice of doctor C., who now constantly makes one of my hearers. After this, we supped at Mr B.'s, of the victualling-office, and returned home with joy and great gladness of heart. Who can express the loving-kindness of the Lord, or show forth all his praise?

Saturday, March 1. Expounded in the morning, more hearers than ever, some of which wept. Dined and supped with general C., who sent last night to invite me and my friend, and treated us with particular respect.

Went in the afternoon to the Jewish synagogue, and was surprised to see one of the head of them come from the farthest end, and put me in one of their chiefest seats ; but afterwards he told me he had heard my sermon yesterday against swearing, and thanked me for it. Not unto me, not unto me, O Lord, but unto thy name be all the thanks and glory ! I continued with them their whole service, and spent most of my time there in secret prayer to God, that the veil might be taken from their hearts, and that blessed time might come when his chosen people should again be engrafted into their own olive-tree, and all Israel be saved.

Visited an unhappy man in prison, who last night, in a drunken fit, murdered a fellow soldier. I providentially met him just as he was apprehended, and laid

before him the terrors of the Lord. At first he seemed unconcerned; but in a short time he was pricked to the heart, desired me to come and see him, and to-day trembled and wept bitterly. Oh, drunkenness, what mischief hast thou done? Thy name is Legion, for behold a troop of sins come along with thee.

In the evening I had near, if not more, than a thousand hearers; and I took occasion, from the poor man's example before-mentioned, to warn the soldiery not to be drunk with wine, wherein is excess; a sin that most easily besets the men of Gibraltar. May they hear and fear, and sin no more presumptuously. I had a great hoarseness upon me; but, notwithstanding, God enabled me to speak with power. When we are weak, then are we strong. What mercies has God shown me this last week! Oh, that my friends, when they hear of it, may praise him! for surely God has harkened to their prayer.

Sunday, March 5. After morning exposition in the church, went and saw the Roman Catholics at their high mass, and shall only make this remark;—that there needs no other argument against popery, than to see the pageantry, superstition, and idolatry of their worship.

About ten, went to the church belonging to the garrison; preached to a most thronged audience, and received, what my soul longed after, the sacrament of Christ's most blessed body and blood. Both the generals were there, and near fifty more communicants. The weekly collection for the poor was larger than ever was known, and ***** was so affected, that he wished himself a despised methodist. We are not fit for God to work by, till we are despised by men, that the excellency and power of preaching may be seen to be of God only.

Dined at governor S.'s, and, at the request of the inhabitants and gentlemen of the garrison, preached in the afternoon. Expounded in the evening to above a thousand hearers, of all denominations; supped with general C., went home betimes, full of unspeakable

comfort. I am never better than when I am on the full stretch for God. God grant I may not, like Jehu, drive furiously at first, and afterwards fall back; but, forgetting those things which are behind, may I reach out to those things that are before, and press forwards towards the mark, for the prize of my high calling in Christ Jesus! Methinks I hear my dear friends say silently, Amen. And may the great God say so too.

Monday, March 6. Had near, if not more than a hundred at morning exposition; and it being the last day of my sojourning at Gibraltar, many came to me weeping, telling me what God had done for their souls, desiring my prayers, and promising me theirs in return. Others both gave and sent me tokens of their love, as cakes, figs, wine, eggs, and other necessaries for my voyage, and seemed to want words to express their affection. The good Lord note their kindnesses in his book, and reward them a thousand fold!

About twelve, went to the church, according to appointment, and made a farewell exhortation, as God gave me utterance, to a great number of weeping soldiers, women, &c.; after which we kneeled down, and having recommended each other to the care of God, I left them, went and took my leave of the two generals; visited the confined prisoner; dined at a gentlewoman's house of the town; left nearly fifty letters to be sent to England; and about four, went on board, accompanied to the sea-side with nearly two hundred soldiers, women, officers, &c., who all sorrowed at my departure, and wished me good luck in the name of the Lord. Surely I may now expect greater success abroad, having such an addition of intercessors in my behalf. O Lord, put their tears into thy bottle, and let their cry come unto thee.

Sampson's riddle has been fulfilled at Gibraltar. Out of the eater came forth meat; out of the strong came forth sweetness. Who more unlikely to be wrought upon than soldiers? and yet I have not been amongst any set of people, where God has made his power more to be known. Many that were quite stark blind, have

received their sight; many that have fallen back, have repented, and turned unto the Lord again; many that were ashamed to own Christ openly, have waxen bold; and many that were saints have had their hearts filled with joy unspeakable, and full of glory. This is the Lord's doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes. May he give a blessing to the books dispersed amongst them, and perfect the good work begun in their hearts, till the day of our Lord Jesus! May they be my joy and crown of rejoicing at the last day; and may God's mercies to me in every place make me more humble, more zealous, more thankful, and more steady to do or suffer whatever my dear Redeemer hath allotted for me. Into his hands I commend my spirit, as into the hands of an all powerful preserver.

About five came on board, and was gladly received by my flock, whom I hope to love better for being a little absent from them. Interceded and gave thanks, as usual, at night on deck; and was pleased that I was again retired from the world. It rained much, but that made us the more fervent. Water us, O Lord, we beseech thee, with the dew of thy heavenly benediction!

Tuesday, March 7. Went and conversed with, and dispersed some books amongst the soldiers that we took from Gibraltar. Three of them belonged to one of the societies, and desired with some others to come with me in our ship. God sanctify my ministry unto them! Most of the rest are of the Scots church, but seem very willing to conform. What a pity is it, Christ's seamless coat should be rent in pieces on account of things in themselves purely indifferent!

At dinner we were likely to be struck against by the man of war; but God had mercy on us, commanded the wind to shift about, and delivered us out of so great a danger. Oh, that we may show forth our thankfulness, not only with our lips, but in our lives! How ought creatures to live who are every moment liable to be hurried away by death to judgment!

This day we set sail from Gibraltar. At first the wind was fair, but afterwards blew contrary, which made both

me and many others sick. I should have wondered if God had not sent me a thorn in the flesh, after such abundant success. May I learn to suffer, as well as to do thy will, O God!

Wednesday, March 8. Had a useful conference with one who was an instrument, under God, of introducing me at Gibraltar, and who, I trust, will make a devout centurion. Grant this, Holy Father, for thy dear Son's sake!

Finished my exposition on the creed in the great cabin, and did my other duty in the ship, as usual. The wind blew hard, and God sent abroad his lightning great part of the day. J. D., friend H., and myself also, were sick, but not so as to prevent our intercession for absent friends. Whatever befalls me, O God, may I never forget their works and labour of love. As yet, blessed be God, they are always on my mind, and I bear them on my heart whensoever I go in and out from before the Lord. And nothing does and will support me more under all crosses, than the hopes of seeing them grown in grace when I return to England. O God prepare me for so great a blessing!

Gave myself, as much as my indisposition of body would give me leave, to the word of God and prayer; and was much affected with what is said of Hezekiah, 2 Chron. xxxii. 25, that because he rendered not again, was not thankful enough for the great things God had done for him, he was permitted to fall through the pride of his heart. Alas! what danger am I in of sharing the same fate! O, my friends, cry mightily unto God, that no such evil come upon me.

Thursday, March 9. Married a couple on deck. I endeavoured to give them a suitable exhortation after the solemnity was over, and hope this couple will call Christ to their marriage. It is through a neglect of this that we have so few happy matches.

The contrary wind still continuing, my sea-sickness increased; so that I was obliged to omit reading prayers to the soldiers, and go to bed sooner than usual. I

find this sickness will purge my body, and hope, through grace, it will purify my soul. Every branch that beareth fruit, says Christ, my father purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit. May that scripture this day be fulfilled in my heart!

Friday, March 10. My bodily indisposition still increased; there was a great storm without, but, blessed be God, a calm within. Sometimes, indeed, my will would inwardly rebel, which plainly showed me what a distance I was from God. But I hope, through inward and outward sufferings, I shall at length be able to say in all things, Father, not my will, but thine be done.

Did my usual duty in the great cabin, and began expounding the ten commandments; interceded for friends on deck, and went to bed full of a sense of my own unworthiness. Oh, that I could always see myself in my proper colours! I believe I should have little reason to fall down and worship myself. God be merciful to me a sinner.

Saturday, March 11. Blessed be God, this morning the storm began to blow over, and light broke in upon my soul. Was enabled to read prayers and expound both in the cabin, and to the soldiers, with more vigour than I have since we left Gibraltar. Had reason to think my late indisposition had been sanctified to me. Suffering times are a Christian's best improving times. For they break the will, wean us from the creature, prove the heart; and by them God teaches his children, as Gideon by thorns and briars taught the men of Succoth.

All the time of my indisposition, my dear friend H. mourned over me like a dove. Blessed be God, familiarity does not breed contempt between us, but our love to each other increases daily. Jesus Christ is the only rock whereon alone true friendship can be built.

Sunday, March 12. Expounded with more enlargement than usual, and gave my people notice that I intended speaking to them one by one, to see what ac-

count they could give of their faith. I have not ceased warning every one of you, says the apostle. May I follow his steps!

Preached the sermon God enabled me to make in the storm before we came to Gibraltar, in the great cabin; and God was pleased to set his seal to it. Had some close conversation with my companions about their interior; interceded for absent friends, and had reason to hope my weak efforts to promote his glory had not been in vain in the Lord. May God give me a thankful heart!

Monday, March 13. Blessed be God! this is the most comfortable day I have had since I came last aboard, slept better than usual; was enabled to compose freely; [perceived my appetite to return;] was enlarged much in intercession, and found I had reason to give thanks for my late indisposition. O, how gently does my gracious master deal with me! Though sorrow may endure for a night, yet joy cometh in the morning. Lord, grant I may spend that health thou hast now restored to me to thy honour and service! It is good for me that I have been a little chastised; for who knows but I might otherwise have perished by being lifted up above measure with my last success? Lord, give me humility, though it be through sufferings! So shall thy blessings never prove my ruin.

Thursday, March 14. Began to put in execution what I promised on Sunday,—inquired into the faith of those committed to my charge; and though all of them were not so great proficient as I could wish, yet I find they know enough to save them, if they put what they know in practice; so that they cannot charge God if they miscarry. Oh! that the Lord may give them his blessing!

Had much of the presence of God with me, and felt such a fervent love for my christian friends, that I feared how I should behave, were God to call any of them from me. But I trust sufficient for such an hour will be the strength thereof.

Wednesday, March 15. Was much pleased with

my present situation, and had reason to bless God for some farther visible good effects of my ministry. Was highly delighted in seeing friend H. active in teaching the lambs of my flock. He has now gotten a regular school, and the children began to-day to come at regular set hours. Several also of the soldiers learn to write and read; so that my friend is like to make a useful man. God make him more and more so every day!

Thursday, March 16. Preached this afternoon my sermon against swearing, at which several of the soldiers wept. Blessed be God! that sin is much abated amongst us; and I think a visible alteration may be perceived through the whole ship. Not unto me, not unto me, O Lord, but unto thy name be the glory!

Was much strengthened in my present undertaking, by reading the story of "Ezra," and joined in intercession with those who set apart this day as a day of fasting and prayer for the sins of the nation to which we belong. May they prove as effectual as those which Moses put up for the children of Israel!

The sick increased to-day; visited near a dozen. May I by this frequent visiting sick beds, learn to improve my time of health. For, alas, what can be done in time of sickness? I find but few that are able with any tolerable patience to sustain their bodily infirmities. But to have a wounded spirit at the same time, good God, who can bear it?

Friday, March 17. Last night God sent us a fair wind; and we began to sail most pleasantly. I was comforted on every side, and enabled to intercede fervently for all mankind. Oh, that the love of God and man were shed abroad in my heart!

Saturday, March 18. The weather being exceeding fair, and the sea calm, I went with captain W. on board the Lightfoot, dined with the gentlemen belonging to the ship and colonel C. who came on board to pay them a visit. Married a couple; dispersed bibles, testaments, soldiers' monitors, amongst the men; exchanged some books for some cards, which I threw

overboard, preached a sermon against drunkenness, which God enabled me to finish yesterday; and returned in the evening, highly delighted with seeing the porpoises roll about the great deep. O Lord, the sea is full of thy riches! marvellous are thy works, and that my soul knoweth right well. O, that I may live to praise thee for them! What mercies have I received this week! they are more in number than the hairs of my head. Oh, that my friends would give thanks for me!

Sunday, March 19. Went with captain W. on board the Amy; read prayers and preached to above two hundred and twenty hearers; and married a couple, who did not behave so well as I could wish. The bridegroom laughed several times in the midst of the solemnity, upon which I shut up my prayer-book: but he showing his concern by weeping, I then proceeded, gave him and the bride a bible, as the best present I could make them; and exhorted all to holiness of life. God give them a hearing ear, and an obedient heart!

Dined with colonel C., who treated me with the utmost civility, and took care to dispose of some books I brought with me to proper persons.

About three we returned to the Whitaker, read prayers and preached my sermon against drunkenness; after which captain M. made a useful speech to the men, and exhorted them to give heed to the things that had been spoken. Religion is likely to go on well, when both the civil and ecclesiastical powers are engaged in keeping up the purity of it. But, Lord, unless thou assist us, all our endeavours are but in vain. Vouchsafe, then, we beseech thee, to give us thy blessing!

Had above an hour's close conversation with my companions concerning their interior; and walked with friend H. on deck till twelve at night, admiring God's wonders in the deep. Blessed be God for sending us abroad.

Monday, March 20. To-day colonel C. came to dine with us, and in the midst of our meal we were

entertained with a most agreeable sight ; it was a shark about the length of a man, which followed our ship, attended with five little fishes called the pilot-fish, much like a mackerel, but larger. These I am told always keep the shark company ; and what is most surprising, though the shark is so ravenous a creature, yet let it be never so hungry, it never touches one of them. Nor are they less faithful to him. For, if at any time the shark is hooked, these little creatures will not forsake him, but cleave close to his fins, and are often taken up with him. Go to the pilot fish, thou that forsakest a friend in adversity, consider his ways, and be abashed. This simple sight one would think sufficient to confute any atheist (if there be such a fool as a speculative atheist) in the world.

After dinner I read prayers and expounded to my own people ; and then went aboard the *Amy* with colonel C. who used me with uncommon civility ; married a couple ; and came back to the *Whitaker*, rejoicing to see the works of the Lord, and the beauty of the great deep. Who would but come abroad ?

Had near two hours close conversation with a gentleman, in whom appear many marks of the new birth. Surely he will prove a devout centurion ! How shall I be constrained till it be accomplished !

Tuesday, March 21. Had fresh reason to be thankful : captain M. made me a kind present ; the weather exceedingly pleasant ; and what was the greatest blessing of all, God's Holy Spirit seemed to be moving on the faces of some of the souls in the ship.

The weather growing warmer, friend H. had some cloths hung over to cover his school. His children come very regular both to learn and to say their prayers at night. Captain W. takes great delight in them. Captain M. much encourages the soldiers to learn to read and write ; so that we begin to live as regular now as we could wish to do on shore. Blessed be God for thus making his power to be known !

Though God gives me so much comfort, yet my dear England friends are seldom out of my mind ; though

absent in body, I am present with them in spirit. The Lord direct my way unto them, and grant if ever I return, it may be in the fulness of the blessing of the gospel of peace!

Wednesday, March 22. Saw a large grampus rolling and spouting out water for a long while at a short distance from our ship: it put me in mind of the behemoth spoken of by holy Job, and of the Leviathan mentioned by the royal psalmist. O God, who is like unto thee?

Thursday, March 23 This morning we began to have prayers at six o'clock, and the drum beat to call the people. Methinks we grow more and more regular every day. God be praised!

Was very fervent in intercession for absent friends and all mankind. Oh, intercession is a most delightful exercise! How does it sweeten and purify the heart!

Visited near twelve or fourteen sick persons; and yet such is God's mercy to me, that though the place where they lie is much confined, and they catch the fever of one another, yet God keeps me from infection. The way of duty is the way of safety. Now God has sent his visitations abroad amongst us, I hope we shall learn righteousness.

Friday, March 24. To-day the sick still increased, and friend H. was very ready to assist and carry things to them. Nothing more useful than visiting sick beds. How are those to be pitied, who purposely shun such improving sights!

Had still fresh reason to bless God for the success of my ministry. Not unto me, not unto me, but unto thy name, O Lord, be all the glory!

We begin now to live so happy on shipboard, that I believe we shall part with each other with regret. By this may all men know we are Christ's disciples, that we love one another!

Sailed a hundred and fifty-four miles the last twenty-four hours. And was much delighted in seeing many porpoises playing about the ship, one of which captain W. caught, and part of its liver we had dressed for

dinner: it had a head much like a pig, and was about six feet long. The works of the Lord are exceeding great, and to be admired of all them that have a delight therein.

Churched a woman who lately was delivered of a dead child, and afterwards gave her an exhortation applicable to her circumstances. God grant she may apply it to her heart!

Sunday, March 26. This day God I trust magnified his power in the conversion of a young gentleman on board, whom he has been pleased to visit with a fever. His convictions were strong, and, as far as I could find, a thorough renovation begun in his heart. The good Lord perfect it till the day of his dissolution. Now, God begins to show me wherefore he hath sent me. O that I were humble! that I might be fit for the High and Lofty One, who inhabiteth eternity, to work by.

Preached a sermon in the afternoon, on Luke iii. 14. "And the soldiers likewise came unto him, and demanded, saying, 'and what must we do?' And he said unto them, 'Do violence to no man, neither accuse any falsely, and be content with your wages.'" I made it at the request of captain M. who seems in earnest about the great work of his salvation. He has read Arndt's "True Christianity," and is now reading Law's "Christian Perfection;" books worth their weight in gold, and which God has blessed to the conversion of many. But what are books without thy Spirit, O Lord? Do thou bless them unto him, and they shall be blessed.

Exchanged some bad books that were on board (which I threw immediately into the sea) for some good ones, blessed be God; all that I have found them with, as yet, have been ready to surrender them up. And I find it by daily experience more and more that people who are truly awakened to a sense of the Divine Life, cannot bear to read any thing trifling; but throw away their useless books, as those did the books of divination and curious arts, whose conversion we read in the Acts, chap. v.

Monday, March 27. Last night God was pleased to take away a black boy of captain W.'s after he had been ill of a violent fever for some days.—He was never baptized, but I had a commission from his master, who seemed much affected at his death, to instruct and baptize him, if it had pleased the most high that he should recover; but God saw fit to order it otherwise. His holy will be done. About ten in the morning he was wrapt up in a hammock and thrown into the sea. I could not read the office over him being unbaptized, but captain W. ordered the drum to beat, and I exhorted all the soldiers, sailors, &c. as God gave me utterance, to remember their Creator in the days of their youth, and to prepare for that time when the sea should give up its dead, and all nations be called together to appear before the Son of God. Oh, that they may be made wise by it, that they may lay to heart what has been said, and practically consider their latter end.

Had our blessed Lord been here, I believe he would have wept to see what havoc sin hath made amongst us. Do thou, Lord, teach us so to number our days, that we may apply our hearts unto wisdom.

Tuesday, March 28. This day captain M. began to come at six in the morning and join in prayers on deck, instead of having prayers in the great cabin. Surely our soldiers will be without excuse, since their captain leads so good an example; blessed be God, I have no reason to complain of them, for they come very regularly twice a day to prayer, and an oath seems to be a strange thing amongst most of them. Many marks of a sound conversion appear in several aboard, and we live in perfect harmony and peace, loving and beloved of one another. Surely, my friends, your prayers are heard. Continue instant in them, and you shall see greater things than these: for God delights in the prosperity of his servants.

Wednesday, March 29. Sailed near a hundred and sixty miles every twenty-four hours, for several

days, most delightfully pleasant weather; and had much of God's presence amongst us.

Heaven is, dear Lord, where'er thou art.

Oh, never then from us depart;

For to my soul 'tis hell to be

But for one moment void of thee!

Thursday, March 30. Had still more proofs of a thorough conversion being wrought in some of the ship. I hope many of us shall have reason to bless God for coming on board the Whitaker. God grant, while I preach to others, I myself may not be a cast-away. But God is love, and he will not, if my eye be single, let his blessings destroy me. O, let thy power be exerted in preserving me, even me always, O my Saviour!

Renew thy likeness, Lord, in me,

Lowly and gentle may I be;

No charms but these to thee are dear:

No anger may'st thou ever find,

No pride in my unruffled mind,

But faith and heaven-born peace be there.

A patient, a victorious mind,

A life that all things cast behind,

Springs forth obedient to thy call;

A heart that no desire can move,

But still t'adore, and praise, and love,

Give me, my Lord, my life, my all!

Friday, March 31. This being the crucifixion of our blessed Lord, I preached a sermon on the penitent thief, and I hope God gave it his blessing. We began prayers later than usual, so that before I had done, darkness came upon us, which put me in mind of that darkness which overwhelmed the world, when the God of Nature suffered. Oh, that our hearts may rend like the rocks, and our souls arise from the death of sin, as the bodies of those did from their graves who appeared to many in the holy city, after our Lord's resurrection!

Had a good instance of the benefit of breaking

children's wills betimes. Last night going between decks (as I do every night) to visit the sick and to examine my people, I asked one of the women to bid her little boy that stood by her, say his prayers: she answered, his elder sister would, but she could not make him. Upon this, I bid the child kneel down before me, but he would not until I took hold of its two feet and forced it down. I then bid it say the Lord's Prayer, (being informed by his mother he could say it if he would,) but he obstinately refused, until at last, after I had given it several blows, it said its prayers as well as could be expected, and I gave it some figs for a reward. And this same child, though not above four years of age, came to-night on deck, when the other children came to say their prayers to my friend H. and burst out into a flood of tears, and would not go away until he had said his too. I mention this as a proof of the necessity of early correction: children are sensible of it sooner than parents imagine. And if they would but have resolution to break their wills thoroughly when young, the work of conversion would be much easier, and they would not be so troubled with perverse children when they are old.

Saturday, April 1. Wonderfully pleasant sailing still, and what was infinitely better, had reason to think several went forward in the great work of their salvation. Oh, that we may be buried with Christ in baptism, and rise with him to newness of life!

Sunday, April 2. Rose early this morning, and joined in spirit with my dear absent friends, who were receiving the holy eucharist, and celebrating our blessed Lord's resurrection. I find my not being in priest's orders is a great hinderance to my ministry, which will oblige me to return to England as soon as possible. The good Lord prepare me for that second imposition of hands!

Preached a sermon in the afternoon, on Phil. ii. 10. "That I may know him, and the power of his resurrection."—Oh, that we may all experience it in our hearts! for without it, Christ as to us, is dead in vain.

April 3. Had some farther conversation with the young gentleman whose conversion I mentioned before, and who I hope is really quickened from above. He told me he used to wonder to hear me talk that all our thoughts, words, and actions, ought to be dedicated unto God, but now he perceived what I said to be true. How does the new nature give us new notions! It seems a difficult task to the natural man to turn his whole life into one continual sacrifice, but the spiritual man does it with ease: he feels a divine attraction in his soul, which as sensibly draws his heart towards God, as the loadstone attracts the needle. Draw us then, O God, and our affections will ascend up after thee!

About eleven went on board the Lightfoot, prayed with a sick man, preached my sermon on the penitent thief. Afterwards went on board the Amy, catechised the children, dined on a dolphin, had some useful conversation, preached to the soldiers, returned home about six, read prayers, visited the sick, interceded for friends, and went to bed praising and blessing God.

April 7. Great enlargement of heart has been given me for these four days last past, particularly to-day, in which God has vouchsafed me much of his presence and assisting grace; observed still stronger signs of a thorough conversion being wrought on some on aboard; had most delightful sailing, and every thing as pleasant as this vain world can afford. These are preparatives for future trials: welcome in the name of God: he will uphold me. If it were not for the corruptions of my own heart, which are continually stirring, what have I to disturb my peace; but as long as those Amalekites remain in my soul, I shall never be perfectly at ease. Lord, keep me but striving, and I shall at last be more than conqueror, through Jesus Christ that loved me.

April 8. Went on board the Lightfoot and Amy, and preached to the soldiers of each ship, dined with colonel C. who continued extremely civil, and at my return found the sick increase upon my hands. But

few in the ship escape. The good Lord make all their beds in their sickness!

Had much of the presence of God with me to-day. The heat uncommonly temperate, as it has been for some time, and the ship sailed all day as though she was carried on the wings of the wind. Preached two sermons besides my exposition at six in the morning, and I hope God set his seal to them. Was well pleased to hear by my friend H. (who is very active in carrying things to the sick) that the poor people between decks prayed heartily for me.

And now indeed we live more comfortably in the great cabin than can easily be imagined. We talk of little else but God and Christ. God has greatly blessed the "Country Parson's Advice to his Parishioners," that excellent book; and scarce a word is to be heard among us when together, but what has reference to our fall in the first, and our new birth in the second Adam, the Lord from heaven; so that we all, I trust, are resolved to put my afternoon's text into practice, and are determined not to know any thing save Jesus Christ and him crucified. Grant this, O Father, for thy dear Son's sake. Oh, that I knew how to be thankful! Oh, that heaven and earth would join with me in praising God!

I would not, Lord, alone
Thy praises celebrate;
I'd call the blessed angels down,
I'd move the world's united state,
Till they in fervent songs thy gracious acts relate.

April 10, 11. Spent good part of these two days in mending my nets. Had exceeding pleasant weather. Some more of the sailors were convicted of sin, and others send notes to be prayed for, and give thanks as regularly as in any parish. Blessed be God, we live very comfortably.

April 12 or 13. To-day captain W. caught a dolphin, which was most beautiful when drawn out of the water, but its colour soon changed. Just so is man; he flourishes for a little while; but when once death

cometh, how quickly is his beauty gone! A Christian may learn a lesson of instruction from every thing he meets with.

April 14. To-day I could have wished for some young prodigals aboard the Whitaker, to see one of our soldiers dying. Alas, how did his breast heave, his heart pant, and great drops of sweat trickle down his face! his eyes looked ghastly, and the whole man was in a bitter agony. Captain W. went down between decks once or twice to see him, and I used the last prayer several times. About nine at night he expired, I fear without hope, for he killed himself by drinking. Oh, that all drunkards would learn from him to be wise in time, and practically consider their latter end!

April 15. This morning I buried the dead soldier in time of public prayers, chose proper lessons, and gave the soldiers a suitable exhortation; but I was so affected with a sense of the misery of fallen man, that I could not speak with my usual vigour.

To-day was called in a hurry to pray by one of the devout soldiers who came from Gibraltar, and who was supposed to be expiring. I came, (I saw,) and rejoiced in spirit; for his soul seemed full of God. Instead of being affrighted at the approach of the king of terrors, he welcomed it, and said he was going to his dear Redeemer; then he fell as it were into a trance, and poured out his heart in repeating some very applicable verses out of the psalms. Upon which we thought he would have died: but lo! God brought him from the nethermost hell. From that instant the fever left him, and he recovered. Oh, what difference is there between him that feareth God, and him that feareth him not, in their last hours! Lord, let me die the death of the righteous, and let my future state be like his.

Exercised a little discipline this evening on a boy, whom captain M. took notice of above a week ago for behaving ill at church, and said he would deliver him up to me: I therefore, by the advice of his master, ordered him to be tied until he could say the 51st psalm, which he repeated to-night very solemnly in the

midst of the congregation. May it be a warning to him for the future !

Sunday, April 16. Read prayers and expounded at six in the morning, and preached to my own people : then went and preached on board the Lightfoot, and afterwards dined, read prayers, and preached on board the Amy : returned about five in the evening to the Whitaker, read prayers and preached, visited the sick, and went to bed blessing God for the strength of the day. All the officers continue extremely kind, and seem studious to oblige me all they can. The good Lord reward them a thousand fold !

This evening I was sent for by a sailor, who has been the most remarkable swearer on board ; and whom I in an especial manner warned about two days ago, telling him, I believed God would remarkably visit him, as well as the others. He laughed, and said he hoped not. But to-night he sent for me, trembling, and burning with a fever, told me what grievous sins he had been guilty of, and prayed most fervently for repentance. Two or three of the same stamp have been taken in the same manner. God grant they may flee from the wrath to come ! Sinners must either bend or break.

Tuesday, April 18. Was greatly delighted in seeing two water-spouts, which ran along for several miles, and by the especial providence of God escaped us. We saw one of them coming, and were surprised to observe a sudden calm for about six minutes round the Whitaker, when the other parts of the sea boiled like a pot. But surely the everlasting I Am said to the sea, at that instant, let there be a calm in that place ; for by that means our ship was immediately stopped in her course, and so the water-spout passed by before we came up to it ; otherwise it would have torn our sails in pieces. God's hand was so visible in this, that several said, they never beheld the like before. O how does Providence watch over us, when we think nothing of it ! Who would but live well to be under the immediate protection of such an overruling power ? After

this, several squalls came upon us, which afforded me glorious matter for adoring that great good God, whom winds and storms obey. The sailors were in great hurry and confusion, but to my comfort not one single oath was heard all the while : a proof this, that sailors may pull their ropes without swearing, and that the words spoken to them have not altogether fallen to the ground : blessed be God !

Saturday, April 22. Fled as it were on the wings of the wind for three days past, sailing sometimes a hundred and seventy, sometimes a hundred and eighty miles in twenty-four hours. I find that God generally sends us strongest winds when nearest our port. May I learn from hence a lesson of instruction ; and the nearer I come to my haven of eternal rest, the quicker may I move !

Spent most of these days in writing to my dear friends in England, and in particular supplication for direction how to act in the land whither I am going. The thoughts of my own weakness, and the greatness of those trials which I must necessarily meet with, fill me with a holy fear. But wherefore do I fear ? the eternal Almighty, I Am hath and will no doubt protect me !

Sunday, April 23. Preached twice to my people to-day, and spent most of the rest of the day in earnest prayer for the divine assistance in my present undertaking, being as we imagined near the haven where we would be. The morning lessons were exceeding applicable, so that we could not help taking notice of it. By this I know God favours me.

Monday, May 1. This morning went out upon deck, after being confined to my bed a week by a violent fever, with which all except three or four in the ship have been visited. I was blooded thrice, and blistered and vomited once, and, blessed be God, I can say, it is good for me that I have been afflicted ; for as afflictions abounded, consolations much more abounded, and God enabled me to rejoice with joy unspeakable and full of glory. Satan desired to have me to sift me

as wheat, but Jesus Christ prayed for me, and my faith failed not. I had all the conveniences I could have on shore: captain W. resigned his own bed to me; J. D. and friend H. sat up with me every night, and nothing was wanting to make my sickness comfortable and easy. Blessed be God for these abundant mercies in Christ Jesus!

I hope I shall now experimentally sympathize with those that are sick, and learn to be more tender-hearted to my fellow Christians. I am now made whole: may I sin no more, be more fervent in spirit, serving the Lord! lest a worse end befall me.

Friday, May 5. About ten o'clock this morning buried the cook of the ship, who expired last night. I could have wished for a hundred tongues to have sounded a loud alarm to the people; but the sight of the corpse, and the weakness of my body, would but just permit me to read out the office. Lord, what is man? Oh, why are others taken and I left, but that God's long suffering should lead me to repentance? Grant it, O Lord, for thy dear Son's sake!

In the afternoon I privately baptized a new-born infant. Thus it is, some coming into the world, others going out of it continually. Good God! who can desire to live here always?

This afternoon, after having lain about a week on this coast, we saw Savannah River, and sent off for a pilot. Oh, what joy appeared in every one's countenance! How infinitely more joyful will the children of God be, when having passed through the waves of this troublesome world, they arrive at the haven of everlasting rest? Hasten, O Lord, that blessed time, and let thy kingdom come!

Sunday, May 7. Last night, by the blessing of God, we cast anchor near Tyby island about fourteen miles off Savannah; and to-day God gave me strength to preach my farewell sermon, (which I have sent you,) at which many wept.

After this, I took boat with my friend H. and arrived safe at Savannah, having a most pleasant passage,

about seven in the evening. How God is pleased to deal with me there, I will endeavour to inform you hereafter.

In the mean while, fail not to give thanks for the mercies I have received. Though we have had a long, yet it has been an exceedingly pleasant voyage. God, in compassion to my weakness, has set me but few trials, and sanctified those he hath sent me. I am now going forth as a sheep amongst wolves; but he that protected Abraham when he went out not knowing whither he went, will also guide and protect me; and therefore I cannot close this part of my journal better than with Mr Addison's translation of the 23d Psalm:—

The Lord my pasture shall prepare,
And feed me with a shepherd's care;
His presence shall my wants supply,
And guard me with a watchful eye:
My noon-day walks he shall attend,
And all my midnight hours defend.

When in the sultry glebe I faint,
Or on the thirsty mountain pant,
To fertile vales and dewy meads
My weary wand'ring steps he leads;
Where peaceful rivers soft and slow,
Amidst the verdant landscape flow.

Tho' in the paths of death I tread,
With gloomy horrors overspread,
My steadfast heart shall fear no ill,
For thou, O Lord, art with me still;
Thy friendly crook shall give me aid,
And guide me thro' the dreadful shade.

Tho' in a bare and rugged way
Thro' devious lonely wiles I stray,
Thy bounty shall my pains beguile;
The barren wilderness shall smile,
With sudden greens and herbage crown'd;
And streams shall murmur all around.

A CONTINUATION
OF THE
REV MR WHITEFIELD'S JOURNAL,
FROM HIS ARRIVAL AT
*Savannah, to his return to London.**

SUNDAY, May 7. Arrived at Savannah town about seven this evening, and joined in prayer, and a psalm of thanksgiving with Mr Delamotte, and some pious souls that were rejoiced at my arrival: the good Lord sanctify our meeting to his glory, and his people's welfare.

Spent the remainder of the evening in taking sweet counsel with Mr Delamotte, who seems providentially left behind at Savannah against my coming. How

* Though the journals already published were printed without my knowledge, yet as God has been pleased to let me see, by letters sent to me, that he has greatly blessed them, I now, upon the importunity of friends, consent to the publishing a continuation of them, that those pious persons who have interceded in my behalf, may see what God, in answer to their prayers, has done for my soul.

I am sensible that this, as well as every thing else of such a nature, must necessarily meet with great contempt from natural men, who are strangers to the influences of the Holy Ghost upon the heart. But what have I to do with them? If any of God's children receive the least consolation from my experiences, let almost, formal Christians be offended, and the scoffers of these last days mock on.—I rejoice, yea, and will rejoice.

sweetly does Providence order things for us! Oh, may I constantly follow it as the wise men did the star in the east.

Monday, May 8. Begun to read public prayers, and expound the second lesson at five in the morning to seventeen adults and twenty-five children. May God open their hearts that they may attend to the things that were spoken.

In the afternoon, Mr Causlon sent word, that he and the magistrates would wait upon me, but I chose rather to wait upon them. I was received with great civility, and our chief conversation ran upon the place of my settlement; at last it was resolved that I should have a house and tabernacle built at Frederica, and serve at Savannah, when, and as long as I pleased. I find there are many divisions amongst the inhabitants, but God, I hope, will make me an instrument of composing them: grant this, O Lord, for thy dear Son's sake.

Sunday, May 14. After another week's confinement, by the return of my fever, under which God showed me great mercies, and which went off with a fit of the ague, I attempted to read prayers, but was so exceedingly faint and weak, that I was obliged to leave off before I began the second service. Oh, that my friends had seen me at that hour, they then might have learnt not to have any man's person in admiration, and not to think more highly of me than they ought to think.

Tuesday, May 16. Having by the blessing of God gotten a little strength, I went to see Tomo Chachi, who, I heard, was near expiring at a neighbour's house. He lay on a blanket thin and meagre, and little else but skin and bones. Senauki sat by fanning him with some Indian feathers. There was nobody that could talk English, so I could only shake hands and leave him.

Friday, May 19. God still strengthening me more and more, I went this morning to two little villages, Hampstead and Highgate, about five miles off Savannah. The former consists of three families, making in

all eleven souls, one man a Jew ; two men, one woman and seven children Swissers. I was much delighted with seeing the improvements a few pair of hands had made in their respective plantations, and was surprised to see what industry will do. Surely they speak not truth, who say that the Georgia people have been idle ; for I never saw more laborious people than are in these villages. They live exceedingly hard, but with a little assistance may do very well. I was at a loss, because I could not talk French ; but however I resolved, under God, to follow my worthy predecessor's example, and to visit them once a week, and read prayers to as many as could understand me. I also inquired into the state of their children, and found there were many who might prove useful members of the colony, if there were a proper place provided for their maintenance and education. Nothing can effect this but an orphan-house, which might easily be erected at Savannah, would some of those that are rich in this world's good, contribute towards it. May God in his due time stir up the wills of his faithful people, to be ready to distribute, and willing to communicate on this commendable occasion.

Saturday, May 20. Went once more to see Tomo Chachi, hearing his nephew Tooanoowee was there, who could talk English. I desired him to inquire of his uncle, "whether he thought he should die?" who answered, "he could not tell:" I then asked, where he thought he should go after death? He replied, "To heaven." But alas, how can a drunkard enter there? I then exhorted Tooanoowee, who is a tall proper youth, not to get drunk, telling him, he understood English, and therefore would be punished the more, if he did not live better. I then asked him, whether he believed a heaven? He answered, "Yes." I then asked, whether he believed a hell? and described it by pointing to the fire; he replied, "No." From whence we may easily gather, how natural it is to all mankind to believe there is a place of happiness, because they wish it may be so, and on the contrary, how averse

they are to believe a place of torment, because they wish it may not be so. But God is true and just, and as surely as the good shall go into everlasting happiness, so the wicked shall go into everlasting punishment.

Wednesday, May 24. Went to-day to Thunderbolt, a village about six miles off Savannah, situated very pleasantly near the river, and consisting of three families, four men and two women, and ten servants; I was kindly received, expounded a chapter, used a few collects, called on a family or two that lay near our way, and returned home to Savannah very comfortably, with my friend Delamotte, about six o'clock in the evening. Blessed be God for strengthening my weak body.

Friday, June 2. This evening parted with kind captain Whiting, and my dear friend Delamotte, who embarked for England about seven at night. The poor people lamented the loss of him, and went to the water-side to take a last farewell. And good reason had they to do so: for he has been indefatigable in feeding Christ's lambs with the sincere milk of the word, and many of them, blessed be God, have grown thereby. Surely, I must labour most heartily, since I come after such worthy predecessors. The good Mr John Wesley has done in America, under God, is inexpressible. His name is very precious among the people; and he has laid such a foundation, that I hope neither men nor devils will ever be able to shake. Oh, that I may follow him, as he has Christ.

Monday, June 5. Had a conference with a certain person of the parish, who, I heard last night, had been broaching many heretical doctrines to one of my friends, particularly in denying the eternity of hell torments. I therefore invited him this morning to breakfast; and after imploring God's assistance, in the spirit of meekness, I asked him, whether he believed the eternity of hell torments? He answered frankly, "No." I replied, "What do you mean, sir, when you repeat the twelfth article of our creed?" He said, "He believed

wicked men were to be annihilated." I then read Pearson's "Exposition" of the last article, but he denied it all, said he thought himself in the right, and believed it his duty to inform mankind, that they were to be annihilated. Upon which I repeated to him that passage out of the Revelations, "If any man shall take away from, or add unto the words that are written in this book, God shall take away his name out of the Book of Life, and add unto him all the plagues that are written in this book." This, he said, he believed. Afterwards we discoursed afresh, but finding him resolute to propagate his principles, I then told him with the utmost calmness, that I was sorry that I gave him the cup yesterday at the sacrament; but for the future, he must pardon me, if I refused ever to give it him again. This staggered him a little, but he bore it pretty patiently, yet thought me uncharitable. But I told him I should meet him at the judgment-seat of Christ, and then he would see upon what principles I acted. May God give me grace not to regard the faces of men, but with a humble, well-guided zeal and courage to watch the flock over which the Holy Ghost has made me overseer.

Saturday, July 10. Placed one that came with me, at Highgate, to teach the children English, that belong to that village and Hampstead. They are about twenty in all, of French extraction, but some few of them are able to speak a little in our vulgar tongue. I thought placing a master there, would be of great consequence. First, because I cannot think children will ever be naturalized to the colony, till they can talk our language. Secondly, because the present generation will soon wear off, and these children, being well instructed in ours, will make them forget their own tongue, and should they marry and have children, they would naturally teach their children the same; so that at length we shall all be of one speech. Thirdly, as they are but few in number, and no likelihood of any French minister to come amongst them, I or my successors shall be unable to catechise or bring them to hear the word

of God at our church, unless they are acquainted with the English tongue.

Monday, June 11. Opened a school to-day for the girls of Savannah, a friend, whose heart God was pleased to touch on board the ship, having at my request undertaken to teach them. The work is for my master, and therefore I doubt not of being supplied some way or another with a sufficient fund for the support of it. May God enable him who is set over them to feed them with the sincere milk of the word, and give them grace to grow thereby!

Thursday, June 22. Was taken, as all about me thought for death, with a violent purging and vomiting, which in the space of five hours quite exhausted my spirits, and brought me in appearance almost to the point of death. But God supported me by his inward comforts, caused me to rejoice in it; and cast me into a deep sleep, out of which I awoke perfectly well, to the surprise of all about me. O, who can express the loving-kindness of the Lord, or show forth all his praise! My parishioners in general showed they loved me; for they seemed most solicitous for my welfare. For their sake, as well as for my own, I hope God has so suddenly restored me. God grant I may now begin to be active in my master's service, that whensoever he shall call, I may be found so doing.

Friday, June 24. To the great surprise of myself and people, was enabled to read prayers and preach with power before the freemasons, with whom I afterwards dined, and was used with the utmost civility. May God make them servants of Christ, and then and not till then will they be free indeed.

Friday, July 7. Being the anniversary for opening the court, I preached in the morning at the magistrate's request, and endeavoured with all plainness and humility to show both them and the people what they ought to do to promote their temporal and eternal welfare. O God, do thou bless it, and it shall be blessed through Jesus Christ.

Tuesday, July 11. Returned this evening from

Ebenezer, whither I went yesterday, the place where the Saltzburghers are settled; and was wonderfully pleased with their order and industry. Their lands are improved surprisingly for the time they have been there, and I believe they have far the best crop of any in the colony. They are blest with two such pious ministers, as I have not often seen; they have no courts of judicature, but all little differences are immediately and implicitly decided by their ministers, whom they look upon and love as their fathers. They have likewise an orphan house, in which are seventeen children, and one widow, and I was much delighted to see the regularity wherewith it is managed.—Oh, that God may stir up the hearts of his servants to contribute towards that and another which we hope to have erected at Savannah. Mr Boltzcius, one of their ministers, being with me on Saturday, I gave him some of my poor's store for his orphans, and when I came to Ebenezer, he called them all before him, catechised and exhorted them to give God thanks for his good providence towards them: then prayed with them, and made them pray after him; then sang a psalm, and afterwards the little lambs came and shook me by the hand one by one, and so we parted, and I scarce was ever better pleased in my life. Surely, whoever contributes to the relief of the Saltzburghers, will perform an acceptable sacrifice to our blessed master. They are very poor, but with a little assistance might live comfortably and well. They want a place for public worship, and money to buy cattle, and other necessities for the orphan house and people. May the great God raise up instruments to assist and relieve them; for surely they are worthy.

Tuesday, July 18. About ten o'clock this evening returned to Savannah, having set out from thence yesterday to visit four or five families that live at some of the outward settlements about twelve miles off. Their beginnings as yet are but small, but I cannot help thinking there are foundations laying for great temporal and spiritual blessings in Georgia, when the inhabitants

are found worthy. Blessed be God, in Savannah they will hear the word gladly, and people every where receive me with the utmost civility, and are not angry when I reprove them. May God keep them always thus minded, and prepare me for whatever sufferings he shall permit to fall upon me for doing my duty.

Tuesday, July 25. I am now waiting for the scout-boat which Mr Horton has sent to take me to Frederica, to preach the gospel there also. For therefore am I sent. I should part with regret from the people of Savannah, did I not know God called me from them. For they seem to have a sincere affection for me, and flock (especially every evening) to hear the word of God. I have endeavoured to let my gentleness be known amongst them, because they consist of different nations and opinions. And I have striven to draw them by the cords of love, because the obedience resulting from that principle I take to be most genuine and lasting. My ordinary way of dividing my ministerial labours has been as follows:—

On Sunday morning, at five o'clock, I publicly expound the second lesson for the morning or evening service, as I see most suited to the people's edification; at ten I preach and read prayers, at three in the afternoon I do the same, and at seven expound part of the church catechism, at which great numbers are usually present. I visit from house to house, read public prayers, and expound twice, and catechize, (unless something extraordinary happen,) visit the sicke very day, and read to as many of my parishioners as will come thrice a week. And blessed be God my labours have not been altogether vain in the Lord. For he has been pleased to set his seal to my ministry, in a manner I could not, I dare not in America expect. "Not unto me, O Lord, not unto me, but unto thy name be the glory."

AT FREDERICA.

Tuesday, August 8. After a pleasant passage of five or six days arrived at Frederica, a town situated southwardly above a hundred miles from Savannah,

and consisting of about one hundred and twenty inhabitants. The people received me most gladly, having had a famine of the word for a long season. May God give a blessing to my coming amongst them.

In the evening we had public prayers, and expounding of the second lesson under a large tree, and many more present than could be expected. Blessed be God.

Wednesday, August 9. Began to-day visiting from house to house, and found the people in appearance desirous of being fed with the sincere milk of the word, and solicitous for my continuance amongst them. Poor creatures! my heart ached for them, because I saw them and their children scattered abroad as sheep having no shepherd. Lord, in thy due time send forth some labourer into this part of thy vineyard.

This evening had prayers in a house which Mr Horton hired for us during my stay, and most of the inhabitants, I believe, were present. Blessed be God, timber is sawing for the erecting a more commodious place for public worship, until a church can be built. God grant we may always worship him in spirit and in truth, and then we may be assured that at all times and in all places he will hear us.

Friday, August 11. Went in the morning to, and returned in the evening from, the Darien, a settlement about twenty miles off from Frederica, whither I went to see Mr Macleod, a worthy minister of the Scotch church, and God gave me a most pleasant passage.

Saturday, August 12. This afternoon was alarmed with the news of a family disaster. My dear friend H.'s brother going to find a horse that was lost in the woods, was lost himself, and many guns shot after him for several days, but in vain. I endeavoured to give thanks to God for this and every thing that befalls me, because it is his will, and resolved to set out for Savannah immediately, knowing what concern my dear friend H. must be in at so sudden a loss. Blessed be God for this and all crosses. Father, thy will be done in, by, and upon me for time and for eternity.

In the evening, because I was to go about midnight,

I gave notice I would preach as well as expound, at which almost all the inhabitants were present; for many were obliged to stand without the door. The lesson was very applicable to my circumstances. It was the first of St James, wherein the apostle bids us rejoice when we fall into divers temptations. God enabled me to enlarge on it pretty much. I told the people that God called me and I must away, at which some wept. Oh, God! how dost thou follow me with thy blessings wherever thou sendest me! I looked for persecution, but lo! I am received as an angel of God. Not unto me, O Lord, not unto me, but unto thy name be the glory!

Sunday, August 13. Being disappointed of going by the boat last night, I read prayers, and preached to my dear little flock twice, which caused great joy among them. Mr Horton was extremely civil, and did every thing he could to oblige me. This afternoon after sermon intended to go with him to preach to the soldiers at the Fort of St Simon's, and then the next day to go to St Andrew's, but Lord thou callest me elsewhere. Oh, grant I may have no will of my own, but whenever or wherever thou shalt be pleased to call me, may I without the least reluctance say, "Lo I come!" Had an alarm brought to Frederica that the Spaniards had taken possession of Fort St George, and fired at one of our boats; but this was quickly found to be entirely groundless.

About two in the afternoon, having first read prayers and preached, most of the inhabitants reaccompanied me to the Bluff, and took their leaves of me in an affectionate manner, and loaded me with things convenient for my journey. The good Lord reward them ten thousand fold, and make me thankful for his unmerited mercies!

AT SAVANNAH.

Wednesday, August 16. Arrived this day at Savannah, and had the pleasure of meeting my friend who had been lost; he was from Tuesday till Friday roving about the woods, during which time the great guns were fired according to custom, and the people showed

what a great respect they had for me and my friends ; many of them going out all day and night after him. As soon as I had refreshed myself, I went and visited my parishioners from house to house to return them thanks for their kindness to my friends. An unusual joy appeared in their faces at my unexpected return, and they were ready to say, "How beautiful are the feet of him that bringeth the glad tidings of salvation !" At evening prayers (and a very large congregation was present) I returned my dear hearers hearty thanks for the late instance of their sincere affection, I publicly exhorted my friend that was lost to show forth his thankfulness not only with his lips but with his life, and desired their prayers to God for me that I might now more and more devote myself to my blessed master's service, and study daily to purify my corrupt nature, that I might be made an instrument under him of winning their souls to God.

Wednesday, August 23. A necessity was laid on me to-day to express my resentment against infidelity by refusing to read the burial office over the most professed unbeliever I ever yet met with. God was pleased to visit him with a lingering illness, in which time I went to see him frequently. Particularly about five weeks ago, I asked him what religion he was of, he answered, "Religion was divided into so many sects he knew not which to choose." Another time, I offered to pray with him, but he would not accept it, upon which I resolved to go see him no more ; but being told two days before he died that he had an inclination to see me, I went to him again, and after a little conversation I put to him the following questions : "Do you believe Jesus Christ to be God, the one mediator between God and man !" He said, "I believe Christ was a good man." "Do you believe the Holy Scriptures?" "I believe," replied he, "something of the Old Testament, the New I do not believe at all." "Do you believe, sir, a judgment to come?" He turned himself about, and replied, "I know not what to say to that." "Alas !" said I, "sir, if all these things should be true ——." Which words, I believe,

gave him concern, for he seemed after to be very uneasy, grew delirious, and departed in a day or two. Unhappy man! how quickly was he convinced that all I said was true. Now he and I are of one mind. The day after his decease he was carried to the ground, and I refused to read the office over him, but went to the grave and told the people what had passed between him and me, warned them against infidelity, and asked them whether I could safely say, "as our hope is this our brother doth." Upon which, I believe, they were thoroughly satisfied that I had done right. God grant this may be a warning to surviving unbelievers.

Thursday, August 24. This day went to Highgate with a friend or two more, and read prayers, preached and baptized a child, and catechised in a house lately erected by the inhabitants. For upon my sending a master to teach their children, one offered to give me a part of his lot, and the rest to give their labour. Accordingly I accepted of it, found materials, and to-day it was fit to preach in, and be made a school-house of. The children, though foreigners, answered admirably well, which gave me great hopes that the other foreign children of the colony may also learn our English tongue when a proper master is provided. After service we refreshed ourselves together, thanked our good God, and eat our bread with gladness of heart.

Sunday, August 27. God having now shown both me and my friends that it was his will I should return for a while to England, this afternoon I preached my farewell sermon, to the great grief of my dear parishioners, for their hearts I found were very full as well as mine, which they expressed by shedding many tears. But a sensible alteration appeared in their countenances, when I promised them solemnly before God to return as soon as possible. May God enable me to perform my promise, and prepare my way before me.

The weather was exceedingly hot, and the greatness of the congregation made it still hotter, but God enabled me to preach with power. Thanks be to God for the strength he gives me through Jesus Christ.

Monday, August 28. This being the day of my departure, it was mostly spent in taking leave of my flock, who expressed their affection now more than ever. For they came to me from the morning to the time I left them with tears in their eyes, wishing me a prosperous voyage and safe return, and gave me other tokens of their love. For they brought me wine, ale, cal'e, coffee, tea, and other things proper for my passage, and their love seemed without dissimulation.

About four in the afternoon I went into the boat provided for me by Mr Causton, who, with the recorder, came to my house and took their leave. A great number of people came to the Bluff, and wished me a good voyage with all their souls, and a speedy return! I thanked them, and having desired their prayers, blessed them in the name of God, and took my leave.

My heart was full, and I took the first opportunity of venting it by prayers and tears. I think I never parted from a place with more regret; for America in my opinion is an excellent school to learn Christ in; and I have great hopes some good will come out of Savannah, because the longer I continued there, the larger the congregations grew; and I scarce knew a night, though we had divine service twice a day, when the church-house has not been near full. A proof this, I hope, that God has yet spiritual and temporal blessings in store for them. Hasten, O Lord, that blessed time!

CHARLES-TOWN.

Arrived last night here, and preached twice to-day, I hope with some good effect. The bishop of London's commissary, the rev. Mr Garden, a good soldier of Jesus Christ, received me in a most christian manner.

He and several others offered me a lodging, and were more than civil to me. How does God raise me up friends wherever I go! Who is so good a God as our God!

Was much pleased with the neatness of the buildings, and the largeness of the place. The church is very beautiful, and the inhabitants seemed to be excellently

well settled. God's judgments have been late abroad amongst them by the spreading of the small pox. I hope they will learn righteousness !

Monday, September 4. Was much delighted with a packet of letters I received from Savannah, not only as they were a proof of the writer's affection for me, but also that the Holy Ghost was effectually moving on their souls.

Saturday, September 9. Received another comfortable packet of letters from Savannah friends, and was soon hurried on board, the wind being fair for sailing. Great kindness has been shown me at Charles-town, some presents made me, and there was a general and earnest expectation of my preaching on Sunday. But God seeth not as man seeth. Father, thy will be done !

On board the Mary, captain Coc, commander, bound from Charles-town to England.

Saturday, September 9. About noon came on board with great composure of mind, and thought of my absent friends, settled my things, wrote my journal, and finished some other matters. The wind being fair, weighed anchor, and set sail about five in the evening. The Lord send us a prosperous voyage, and bring us in his appointed time to the haven where we would be !

Saturday, September 16. Had contrary winds all the week, and got but a few leagues from Charles-town, yet God showed me great mercies ; for he enabled me to write several things, and correct others. I have been but a little sea-sick ; and though I have not had my clothes off, and lay upon deck or on a chest every night, yet the goodness of God keeps me healthy and strong, and gives me a feeling possession of his holy spirit. My sphere of action is now contracted into a very narrow compass. There are but few souls on board, and all that I can do is to read public prayers, and add a word of exhortation twice every day, and catechise those I brought with me. The captain and all are very civil, my christian friends have been much upon my heart, and caused me some dejections, but

God was my comforter. Had I my own will, I could wish myself a speedy passage, that I may return the sooner to those few sheep I have left at Savannah; but God knows best, and this retirement, I hope, will break my will, purify my heart, and fit me for the great work that lies before me. Even so Lord Jesus, Amen, and Amen.

Saturday, September 23. Still God is pleased to send us contrary winds, except one night about the middle of the week.—However, he enables me to give thanks—and great reason have I so to do: for the Holy Spirit has been with me of a truth.

I have observed, that before God calls me to a public work, he always sends me into some retirement, but never to so great a one as now.—A sign this, I hope, that a greater work is yet behind. Lord, fit and prepare me for it!

My mind, blessed be God, has been composed and easy. Only the absence of my friends, now and then struck a damp upon my spirits.—But the friend of all is with and in me, and he by his spirit, I trust, will supply the want of their dear company. Amen, Lord Jesus, Amen.

Sunday 24, Monday, September 25. Was oppressed much in spirit these two days. The wind was contrary, and the sea wrought and was tempestuous; but blessed be God, he enabled me to be resigned to his will, this outward and inward trial being only what was to be expected after my late assistances. We must not always be upon the mount in this life.

Ever since Monday evening, God has been pleased to send us fair winds, particularly to-day, when our ship has sailed seven miles an hour, blessed be God.

I have been chiefly busied about writing letters, to engage more labourers, and to get contributions for my poor flock.

Blessed be God! he has made me frequently rejoice in spirit, and now quite reconciles me to my present retirement. When shall I have no will but God's?

Sunday, October 1. Had very little sleep all night,

and was like to fall off the chest whereon I lay, several times, the sea being very rough, and the wind turning in an instant directly contrary. Oh, that I could learn from winds and storms to obey my master!

Buried a young man that came from Georgia, and died this morning. Lord, what is man? He solaced himself with the thoughts of seeing his friends in England. But God saw fit to prevent it, by shortening his days. Lord, thy judgments are like the great deep!

When I buried him, I could not say much, because of the rolling of the ship; but at evening prayer I took occasion from the lesson, which providentially was the fifteenth chapter of the first of Corinthians, to exhort all my shipmates to consider so as to prepare for their latter end. I believe my words came with power. God grant they may have a due effect. Amen, Lord Jesus, Amen!

Friday, October 6. Before I left Savannah, the lesson appointed for the morning was St. Paul's shipwreck, out of the Acts, and before I left Charles-town, the lesson was the first of Jonah, both which made such a deep impression upon me, that I wrote to my friend Habersham, to acquaint him I was apprehensive we should have a dangerous voyage. Since I have been on board, what St. Paul said to his companions, "That he perceived their voyage would be to their great damage," has frequently been pressed upon my heart; and God has now shown me wherefore he gave these previous notices. For on Tuesday night last, after we had sailed one hundred and fifty miles, the last twenty hours, about eleven o'clock arose a sudden violent east wind, which continued till about four in the morning, and put all the sailors to their wits' end. Most of them declared they never had seen the like before. The main sail was slit in several pieces, and several of the other sails, and much of the tackling all to tatters; not a dry place was to be found in all the ship. The captain's hammock, in the great cabin, was half filled with water; and though I lay in the most dry part of the ship, yet the waves broke in upon me twice or thrice.

In short all was terror and confusion, men's hearts failing them for fear, and the wind and the sea raging most horribly. But God, for ever be adored his unmerited goodness, was exceeding gracious unto me. For I felt a sweet complacency in my will, in submission to his. Many particular promises God has made me from his word, that I should return in peace, flowed in upon my heart. And he enabled me greatly to rejoice. This is the first day we have ventured to pull down any of our dead lights, which put me in mind of the long night the Egyptians once saw. But I spent my time in reading, and fervent intercession for absent friends, and comforted myself much with the remembrance of them; most of our fresh provisions are washed over board, and our tackling much out of order, so that we have a prospect but of an indifferent voyage. But blessed be God, the prospect pleases me. For now I shall learn, I trust, how to want as well as how to abound, and how to endure hardship like a good soldier of Jesus Christ. O Lord, let thy strength be magnified in my weakness, say unto my soul, "It is I, be not afraid, and then let storms and tempests do their worst."

Saturday, October 7. This has been a week, blessed be God, though not of much action, yet full of opportunities of exercising my passive graces. To-day, adored be the divine goodness, the weather has cleared up more and more, and our ship has sailed directly before the wind, at the rate of four or five miles an hour.

A desire to see my friends in England, to despatch my business, and to return to my poor flock, prompt me secretly to wish for a continuance of this prosperous gale. But, Lord, I know not what to pray for as I ought. Do with me as seemeth good in thy sight. Only I beseech thee to sanctify my present retirement; that the longer I am upon the sea, the more zealous I may be in thy service, when I come upon dry land.

Saw a Jamaica ship, captain Philips, who has been out nine weeks. What reason have we to be thankful!

Having had no opportunity before, since the storm, of getting many of our people together, gave a word of

two of exhortation to my shipmates, to bless God for our late deliverance, and to sin no more lest a worst storm should befall us.

Saturday, October 14. Sailed this week about six hundred miles ; but yesterday God was pleased to send us a contrary wind, which still continues. Father, thy will be done.

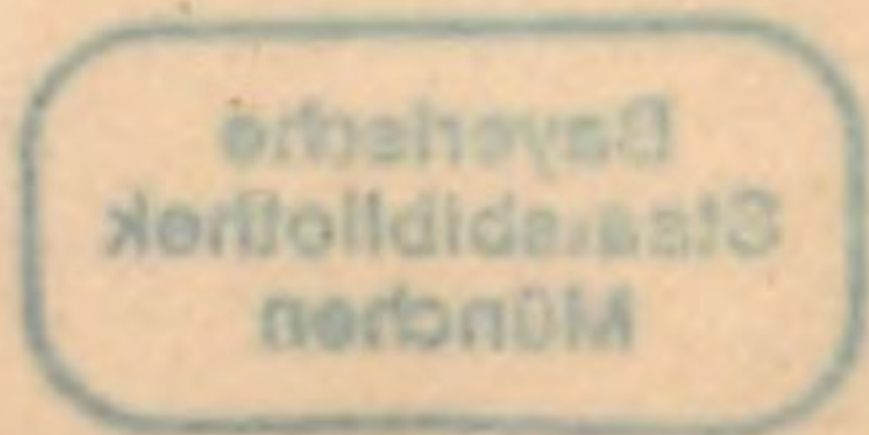
A few days ago I flattered myself we should be soon at our desired port, but God is pleased to defer the accomplishment of my hopes. However, blessed be his name, he enables me to give thanks.

Most of this week has been spent in searching the scriptures, and particular retirements for direction and assistance in the work before me. God has been pleased to send me many inward trials. And now my fresh provisions are gone, and the people are put to the allowance of a quart of water each man for a day. So that I hope now the spiritual man will grow, having so little for the natural man to feed on. Amen, Lord Jesus. Blessed be God I can by his grace say that I rejoice in necessities, and do in every thing give thanks. Keep me thus minded, O dear Redeemer, till thou perfect thy work in my soul.

Had this sentence out of Henry much pressed upon my heart to comfort me in my retirement:—"The mower loses no time whilst he is whetting his scythe."—Thus shall all christians be taught of God.

Sunday, October 15. The weather being calm, and I being kindly invited yesterday, went on board the Constant, captain Philips, bound from Jamaica, who now sails in company with us, and was kindly received both by the captain and his passengers, and not only so, but they spared me what they could of their provisions. A most providential supply; for ours was quite out. But our extremity is God's opportunity. Blessed be his name for thus strengthening our faith. May this be looked upon as a pledge that he will never leave or forsake us.

Our chief discourse was about Georgia, and staying a little longer than was thought: my shipmates were



very suspicious I should be detained on board. But though there was provision for the flesh, yet I like my own situation best, because here are greater opportunities of denying myself, and consequently of making farther improvement in the spirit. Oh, that I may always walk by this rule!

Saturday, October 21. Made but slow advances in our voyage, having had but one or two days of fair wind. But notwithstanding, I believe we shall now soon reach shore; for God has been pleased to visit me all the week with a variety of inward trials, which is a sign to me that I shall experience yet more and more of his mercies. How good is God thus to prepare me by sufferings, that so his blessings may not be my ruin; these things to the natural man are not joyous, but grievous; but God enables me to take comfort only in him, to thank him sincerely for his loving correction; and therefore when I am sufficiently exercised thereby, I hope it will bring forth in me the peaceable fruits of righteousness. Amen.

Sunday, October 22. At the desire of the captain, preached my sermon on rash anger, having hitherto used to expound only. In the lesson were these remarkable words, "Return to thy own house, and show how great things God has done unto thee." And again, "It came to pass that when Jesus was returned, the people gladly received him, for they were all waiting for him." These last words were remarkably pressed upon me at Savannah, when I was consulting God by prayer, whether it was his will that I should go to England. Thus God's word is in particular cases as well as in general, "a light unto our feet, and a lantern unto our paths."

Thursday, October 25. Was much comforted this evening in reading the thirty-third and thirty-fourth chapters of Ezekiel, wherein I could not but observe many circumstances of God's dealing with him corresponding with what I have experienced in myself. The following verses in particular were set home to my heart:—"Also thou son of man, the children of thy people

are still talking against thee by the wall and in the doors of the house, and speak one to another, saying, come, I pray you, and hear what word cometh from the Lord. And they came unto thee as the people cometh, and they hear thy words, but they will not do them, for with their mouth they show much love, but their heart goeth after covetousness. And lo, thou art unto them as a very lovely song of one that hath a pleasant voice, and can play well on an instrument: for they hear thy words, but do them not." Who that knows how God has dealt with me since I have been in the ministry, sees not that this passage answers to my circumstances, as face answers to face in the water? However, this I know, what I have spoken from God will come to pass, lo it will come, and then shall these scoffers and despisers know, that a minister of Christ has been amongst them. Oh, that I may never be brought forth as a swift witness against any; but we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ.

Saturday, October 28. Sailed about three hundred miles the four first days of this week, had a little storm on Wednesday night, and a great calm ever since. We are now within one hundred and fifty leagues of land, and our provisions and water very scanty, and our ship very weak; but the hour of our arrival is not yet come. Lord, teach me to be resigned and thankful, and then deal with me as seemeth good in thy sight.

Blessed be God! he has this week enlarged my heart, and filled me with great comfort, after great inward conflicts. Is not all this to prepare me for further trials we are yet to endure ere we get to England? Lord, thy grace I know will be sufficient for me, and therefore I rejoice in the prospect of enduring tribulation.

Had reason to believe one on board was offended at my enlarging one night on the sin of drunkenness. I always endeavour to speak with the meekness and gentleness of Christ. But if people will account me their enemy, because out of love I tell them the truth, I cannot help that. Lo, I have delivered my soul.

Monday, October 30. Still God is pleased that the wind, what there is of it, should be contrary, and our ship's company are now brought into great straits. Their allowance of water is a quart a day, and our constant food for some time has been on salt beef and water dumplings, which do not agree with the stomachs of some amongst us. But God enables me to rejoice in that and all other necessities, yea, he so comforts me that many I believe are surprised at my cheerfulness. But when we are destitute of outward comforts, then does God more comfort our souls. This morning when I awoke, the faith of Abraham was greatly pressed upon me; and the example of Daniel, and the three children, who were fat and well favoured, notwithstanding they were fed with pulse and peas, is continually before my eyes. Some say we are within a hundred leagues of land. But what does that signify, if God says, hitherto shall you go, and no farther. Lord, in thy due time, let that which now letteth be taken away, but not before this trial has done what it was sent for, though it make us smart.

I warm myself by smiling on, and exhorting them, and this afternoon we joined in solemn prayers suitable to our present circumstances. Lord, let our cry come unto thee. I know it will, and that we shall be answered, if it be best. But great blessings await me on shore, and great trials must precede. Oh, that I may by these small, be prepared for greater sufferings. Amen, Lord Jesus.

Monday, October 30. Was comforted to night in my present circumstances, by these verses out of this evening's lesson. "I have learnt in whatsoever state I am, therewith to be content. I know both how to be abased, and I know how to abound; every where, and in all things I am instructed, both to be full and to be hungry, both to abound and to suffer need. I can do all through Christ which strengtheneth me. Even so come, Lord Jesus." Amen, and Amen.

Reading afterwards in the book of Maccabees, and thinking of my present situation, this verse was pressed

with unspeakable comfort upon my soul. "After this, they went home, and sung a song of thanksgiving, and praised the Lord in heaven; because it is good, because his mercy endureth for ever." I hope my friends will take care to fulfil this when we meet together on shore.

Wednesday, November 1. This afternoon, about four o'clock, as I was in secret, humbling my soul before God, interceding for my friends, and had been praying for a fair wind, and assistance in the great work lying before me, news were brought that the wind was fair; which put me in mind of the angel's being sent to Daniel, to tell him his prayer was heard, when he was humbling his soul with fasting, and praying for the peace and restoration of Jerusalem. Indeed I cannot say, I have purposely, for these three weeks, eaten no pleasant food or fasted, as he did; but our food is so salt that I dare eat but little, so that I am now literally in fastings often. Oh! that I may improve this blessed season for humiliation, and extraordinary acts of devotion, that I may be duly prepared to approve myself a faithful minister of Jesus Christ, whether by honour or dishonour, by evil report or good report.

As soon as we found the wind fair, we joined in thanksgiving, and in singing the first part of the thirty-fourth Psalm, (new version,) which was very applicable to our circumstances. For they tell me they have not above three days' water on board, allowing a quart to each man a day. But he, that at one time, at the request of his disciples, considered the multitude, and worked a miracle for their relief; and, at another time, at the intercession of Moses, gave water to the wandering Israelites, I trust, now, has heard our prayers, and sent this wind with a commission to bring us where he will supply all our wants, if not, O blessed Jesu, thy will be done. Give me grace, I most humbly beseech thee, to hold out my three watches, and at the fourth watch I know thou wilt come. Even so come Lord Jesus.

Saturday, November 4. For these two days last

past, God has been pleased greatly to humble my soul, and bring me low by spiritual desertions ; and to-day he has thought proper again to send us a contrary wind, blessed be his name. Our allowance of water now is but a pint a day, so that we dare not eat much beef. Our sails are exceeding thin, some more of them were split last night, and no one knows where we are ; but God does, and that is sufficient.

Last night he lifted up the light of his blessed countenance upon me, and to day fills me with joy unspeakable, and full of glory ; so that though I have little to eat, yet I inwardly possess all things. I am sometimes afraid lest continued abstinence may occasion a bodily sickness. But wherefore do I fear ? If it does, that and every thing else I know will work for my good. What I most dread, is lest any on board should charge God foolishly ; but I check the first motions I discern arising in any one's heart, and endeavour to justify our good God, in all the evil that he hath brought upon us. I put before them the example of the widow of Sarepta, and caution them against murmuring like the Israelites, at the waters of Marebah. And thus I endeavour to comfort and support them with the comforts wherewith I myself am comforted of God.

This is now the eighth week I have been aboard. If my friends ask me, why I arrived no sooner, I may truly answer, Satan hindered us. For I believe it is he who is permitted to do this ; but this still gives me greater hopes, that a more effectual door than ever will be opened in England, for preaching the everlasting gospel. O Satan, Satan, I defy thee to do thy worst ; thou mayest toss me up and down, and bring me into jeopardy on every side ; but Jesus Christ is praying for me on the mount. And when the time appointed by the father is come, and my soul hereby prepared, he whom winds and storms obey, will speak the word ; and then I shall have a happy meeting with my dear friends !

Sunday, November 5. This day we rejoiced with trembling. For though we thereon commemorated our

deliverance from the gunpowder-plot, yet as our circumstances called for acts of humiliation, I used part of the office of commination, (besides solemn prayer and psalms three times,) and enlarged on these words of St. James, "My brethren, count it all joy, when ye fall into divers temptations; knowing this, that the trying of your faith worketh patience: but let patience have her perfect work." I hope this had a good effect upon my hearers' hearts, and calmed their spirits. For indeed we are brought very low; but I can say with the penitent thief, "that I suffer justly, and do not receive the ten thousandth part of the reward due to my crimes." Lord, remember me now thou art in thy kingdom!

Monday, November 6. Last night, about seven o'clock, God was pleased to suffer a violent wind to arise, which would not permit me to rise till this afternoon, about which time it began in some measure to abate. Blessed be God, through the precaution used by our shipmates, we shipped but little water, only we were driven some leagues back. The weather was pretty cold, and a little cake or two baked on the coals, and a very little salt beef was all my provision for the day; but thus Elijah lived for a long while, and why not I? Nay, he fasted forty days and forty nights. And though I dare presume to do so, yet if God still brings me into greater wants, I doubt not but I shall find that man liveth not by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God. Lord, I desire not to be exempted from suffering, but to be supported under them. If thy glory can be promoted by my trials, lo, here I am, scourge me, try me as it seemeth good in thy sight!

Wednesday, November 8. Preached myself, yesterday and this morning, inwardly weak and fainting, and unable to read scarce any thing. But, blessed be God! though he kill me, yet will I put my trust in him.

When my spirits are gone, I then find my faith, as it were, less lively; but I trust that is only owing to

the frame of my body. For at all other times I have great confidence in God ! and was he now to put it to my choice, whether this trial should continue, or he should send us a fair wind, I should humbly refer it to him again. For I know not what is best for me !

Most in the great cabin now begin to be weak, and look hollow eyed, yet a little while, and we shall come to extremities ; and then God's arm will bring us salvation. May we patiently tarry the Lord's leisure ! Amen, Amen.

Great part of this day I lay down, being weak and much oppressed in my head ; but at night when some doubted what the end of this visitation would be, the following verses were with great comfort pressed upon my soul. " For I am in a strait between two, having a desire to be dissolved, and to be with Christ, which is far better. Nevertheless to abide in the flesh is more needful for you. And having this confidence, I know that I shall abide and continue with you all, for your furtherance and joy of faith : that your rejoicing may be more abundant in Jesus Christ for me, by my coming to you again." Thus christians have meat to eat, which the world knoweth not.

In confidence of this, and such like texts, that have been from time to time applied to my soul, I still (as often as my strength will permit) continue to write letters ready to send when I come on shore. Which reminds me of Jeremiah being commanded to buy land, when his whole country was about to be carried into captivity. Blessed are they that walk by faith, and not by sight !

Though one in his haste the other day cried out, " What Jonah have we here on board ?" And I answered, I am he ; yet many now, I believe, bless God, that I am with them. For, say they, " How should we have been blaming and cursing one another, had not Mr W——d been amongst us." Blessed be God, if my ministry or presence can be instrumental to prevent sin against thee, O Lord, toss me on the ocean as

long as it pleaseth thee! O my dear Lord, I desire to be resigned!

Thursday, November 9. Enjoyed great peace of mind to-day, and was stronger in body than usual. Blessed be the Lord! We are now making for Ireland, and are advanced some leagues towards it. Whether we shall arrive there or not, God only knows. I find all uneasiness arises from having a will of my own. And therefore I simply desire to will what God willeth. Oh! when will this once be?

Friday, November 10. Was much strengthened in our present distress by the second lesson for the day. It was our Saviour's turning the water into wine at the marriage of Canaan. We have applied to him as the Holy Virgin did, and told him in prayer, that "we have but very little water?" At present, he seems to turn away his face, and to say, "What have I to do with you?" But this is only because the hour of extremity is not yet come. When it is, I doubt not but he will now as richly supply our wants, as he did theirs then. May we in patience possess our souls!

Saturday, November 11. Still we are floating about, not knowing where we are. But our people seem yet to have hopes of seeing Ireland. I know not whether I am out in my conjecture, but I imagine some of those ships we have seen, are arrived at England before us. Upon which, perhaps, my friends will expect me, pray for me, and at last give me up for lost. And then God will restore me to them.

The weather now begins to be cold, so that I can say, with the apostle, I am in hungerings and thirsting, cold and fastings often. Hereafter, perhaps, I may add moreover in bonds and imprisonments. But I trust the sufferings of this life will not move me. For they are not worthy to be compared with the glory that shall be revealed in us.

My outward man sensibly decayeth, but the spiritual man, I trust, is renewed day by day. I have besought the Lord many times to send us a fair wind. But now

I see he does not think fit to answer me. I am wholly resigned, knowing that his grace will be sufficient for me, and that his time is best.

Our ship is much out of repair, and our food by no means enough to support nature in an ordinary way, and that of the most indifferent kind too. An ounce or two of salt beef, a pint of water, and a cake made of flour, and skimmings of the pot. But I think often on him who preserved Moses in the ark of bulrushes. And so long as I look upwards my faith will not fail.

Blessed be God for these things, I rejoice in them daily. They are no more than what I expected, and I know they are preparatives for future mercies. God of his infinite mercy humble and try me, till I am rightly disposed to receive them. Amen, Lord Jesus, Amen.

It pities me often to see my brethren lying in the dust, as they have done these many weeks, and exposed to such straits. For God knows both their souls and bodies are dear unto me. But thanks be to God, they bear up well, and I hope we shall all now learn to endure hardships like good soldiers of Jesus Christ.

Sunday, November 12. This morning the doctor of our ship took up the common-prayer book, and observed that he opened upon these words, "Blessed be the Lord God of Israel, for he hath visited and redeemed his people." And so indeed he has, for about eight o'clock this morning news were brought that our men saw land, and I went and was a joyful spectator of it myself. The air was clear, and the sun rising in full strength, so that it is the most pleasant day I have seen these many weeks. Now know I that the Lord will not always be chiding, neither keepeth he his anger for ever. For these two or three days last past, I have enjoyed uncommon serenity of soul, and given up my will to God. And now he hath brought us deliverance. —From whence I infer, that a calmness of mind and entire resignation to the divine will, is the best preparative for receiving divine mercies. Lord evermore make me thus minded!

As soon as I had taken a view of the land, we joined together in a prayer and psalm of thanksgiving, and already began to reflect with pleasure on our late straits. Thus it will be hereafter, the storms and tempests of this troublesome world will serve to render our haven of eternal rest doubly agreeable. I fear now nothing so much as the treachery of my heart, lest like the ungrateful lepers, I should not turn to God and give thanks by leading a holy life. But all things are possible with God, on whose rich mercies and free grace in Jesus Christ, I alone depend for wisdom, righteousness, sanctification and redemption!

Spent a good part of this afternoon in walking upon deck, and blessing God for the prospect I saw all around me. His good providence has been pleased to bring us into a fine large bay, surrounded on each side with high lands and hommocks, much like those near Gibraltar, and a large lighthouse on the fore-land, from which in the evening was shown a light. It lies on north-west of Ireland, and most suppose we are near Limerick, but are not certain, only one of our men having been here before. There are no soundings till you come very near the land. The wind being against us (that little that was of it) we could not get much forward. But God in his due time will bring us on shore. Blessed be his name, the weather is exceeding clear, and this is the most comfortable day I have seen a long time. Lord, make me mindful of these thy mercies all the days of my life!

Tuesday, November 14. Let this day, my soul, be noted in thy book, for God has visited thee with his salvation. On Monday midnight, as I was lying on my bed, my sleep departed from me, and I had no rest in my spirit, because although the weather was so exceeding calm, and we in so great distress, yet no boat was sent to fetch us provisions. Upon this I spoke to the captain, and he to the mate, who in the morning went with a boat, and about noon this day returned loaded with provisions and water, and not only so, but told us he was kindly entreated by the people he met with,

especially by a great country gentleman who came from his seat at midnight, on purpose to relieve him and his companions; furnished them with a fresh boat and other necessaries, most kindly invited me, though unknown, to his house, to stay as long as I pleased; and has ordered horses to wait ready to take me thither.

Who is so great, so good a God, as our God? Our hour of extremity was indeed come. For we had but half a pint of water left, and my stomach was exceeding weak, through my long abstinence; but now his almighty arm hath brought us salvation.

Through all the changing scenes of life,

In trouble and in joy;

The praises of my God shall still

My heart and tongue employ.

Of his deliverance I will boast,

Till all that are distress,

From my example comfort take,

And charm their grief to rest.

Fear him ye saints, and you will then

Have nothing else to fear;

Make you his service your delight,

Your wants shall be his care.

As soon as the provisions came, we kneeled down and returned hearty thanks to our good God who has heard our prayers, and sent his angel before us to prepare our way.

Therefore my life's remaining years,

Which God to me shall lend,

Will I in praises to his name,

And in his service spend.

A little before our provision came, I had been noting in my diary, that I believed deliverance was at hand; for last night and this morning I had the most violent conflict within myself that I have had at all. Thus God always prepares me for his mercies. Oh, that this may strengthen my faith, and make me willing to follow the Lamb wheresoever he shall be pleased to lead me. Amen, Lord Jesus, Amen!

Still greater mercies God confers on his unworthy

servant. For after our provisions were brought aboard, the wind still continued fair, and by six at night blew us to a little place on Karrigholt island, before which we cast anchor. Praise the Lord, O my soul, and all that is within me praise his holy name!

Ever since I have been on board the Mary, these words, "Howbeit we must be cast upon a certain island," (which were part of the lesson I read last at Savannah,) have been continually pressed upon my heart, so that I have often mentioned it to one of my companions. Behold they are now fulfilled. Oh, how unsearchable are thy doings, O Lord, and thy ways past finding out!

Why God dealeth thus with me, I know not now, but I shall know hereafter. However this I know, that this voyage has been greatly for my good. For I have had a glorious opportunity of searching the scriptures, composing discourses, writing letters, and communing with my own heart. We have been on board just nine weeks and three days. A long and perilous, but profitable voyage to my soul; for I hope it has learnt him, in some measure, to endure hardships as becometh a minister of Christ. My clothes have not been off (except to change me) all the passage. Part of the time I lay on open deck, part on a chest, and the remainder on a bedstead covered with my buffalo's skin. These things, though little in themselves, yet are great in their consequences; and whosoever despiseth small acts of bodily discipline, it is to be feared will insensibly lose his spiritual life by little and little. Many inward trials also God has been pleased to send me, which I believe, he has sanctified to my great good. I am now going on shore, to the house of a wealthy gentleman, whom God has commanded to receive me. I may yet be exposed to many perils by land ere I see my dear friends; but his grace, who has preserved me from so many perils by water, will also be sufficient for me on dry land. Whilst I continue on this side eternity, I never expect to be free from trials, only to change them. For it is necessary to heal the pride of my

heart, that such should come. With a particular fear and trembling, I think of going to London. But he that preserved Daniel in the den of lions, and the three children in the fiery furnace, will, I hope, preserve me from the fiery trial of popularity, and from the misguided zeal of those, who, without cause, are my enemies. Father, into thy hands I commend my spirit. Magnify still thy free grace in me. Guide me by thy unerring wisdom, receive, O receive, me for thy infinite mercies' sake, in Christ Jesus, into glory hereafter!

As for the success of my ministry, whilst on board, I shall only say, that I hope much sin has been prevented, and one I hope effectually converted, who is to be my fellow-traveller to England. Lord, if I can but be made instrumental to save one soul, I care not if I am tossed on the ocean through my whole life. Glory be to God on high!

It is observable that just as we had cast anchor, a violent wind rose, which (had it happened sooner) must have greatly hurt us. Marvellous are thy works, O Lord, and that my soul knoweth right well!

About seven at night I dressed myself and went on shore, and was received in a strong castle belonging to Mr Mac Mahon, the gentleman who sent me an invitation. He himself was not at home, having went some miles up to meet me; but his maid servant kindly received us. I asked for water, and she gave me milk, and brought forth butter in a lordly dish: and never did I eat a more comfortable meal. About ten the gentleman (having missed of me at the place appointed) came through the rain, and entertained us most hospitably, and about one we went to bed; I hope with hearts full of a sense of the divine love. My song shall henceforward be always of the loving-kindness of the Lord. I will make mention of his righteousness and truth, in the assemblies of his saints. Now our water is turned into wine!

KILRUSH IN IRELAND.

This morning about eleven o'clock, after being most hospitably entertained by Mr Mac Mahon, and fur-

nished with three horses, I and my servant and my new convert set out for Dublin, and reached Kilrush, a little town about eight Irish miles from Karrigholt, about two in the afternoon, where we were sweetly refreshed, and tarried the remainder of the day with captain Coc, who last night with his whole crew was like to be shipwrecked ; but this morning, by the good providence of God, was brought hither on shore. Surely my shipmates will, of all men, be most miserable if they continue impenitent, having such loud and repeated calls from God.

As I rode along, and observed the meanness of the poor people's living in these parts, I said, if my parishioners at Georgia, complain to me of hardships, I must tell them how the Irish live ; for their habitations are far more despicable, and their living as hard, I believe, as to food ; and yet, no doubt, content dwells in many of these low huts. A man's life does not consist in the abundance of the things which he possesseth.

At my first coming into our inn, we kneeled down and prayed ; and again at night sung psalms, and prayed with the captain and several of my shipmates.—The first time I believe the room was ever put to such a use by a ship's crew and their chaplain.

FOURTHFARGUS.

Friday, November 17. Had a very pleasant ride, over a fine fruitful open country to Fourthfargus, a village as was reckoned only ten, but at a moderate computation thirty English miles from Kilrush. But this is not the first piece of Irish I have met with.—Their innocent blunders often extort smiles from me.

As I stopped to have my horses shod, I went into one of the poor people's cabins, as they call them ; but it may as well be called a sty, a barn, or a poultry-coop. It was about twenty feet long, and twelve broad, the walls built with turf and mud. In it was a man threshing corn, two swine feeding ; two dogs, several geese ; a man, his wife, three children, and a great fire. Georgia huts are a palace to it. Indeed the people live very poorly in this part, some walk bare-

foot with their shoes in their hands to save them from wearing out, others out of necessity. And I observed many of their feet to be much swelled, and ready to gush out with blood, through extremity of cold. Lord, why is my lot cast into a fairer ground? Thy free grace alone has made the difference!

Whilst I was in the cabin, as they call their little Irish huts, I talked with the woman in the house, and found she was a Roman catholic. And indeed the whole commonalty almost are of the Romish profession, and seem to be so very ignorant, that they may well be termed the wild Irish. No wonder, when the key of knowledge is taken from them. Woe unto their blind guides. I can think of no likelier means to convert them from their erroneous principles, than to get the Bible translated into their own native language, to have it put in their houses, and charity-schools erected for their children, as Mr Jones has done in Wales, which would insensibly weaken the Romish interest. For when once they could be convinced that they were imposed upon, they would no longer suffer themselves to be misled. Oh, that some man, in whom is the spirit of the holy God, would undertake this!

LIMERICK.

Saturday, November 19. Presuming the people where I lay last night were Roman catholics, I neglected to call them in to join in prayer, but to my great grief found afterwards that some were protestants, and expected prayers from me. Oh, base ingratitude! Is this my zeal for my late signal deliverance? Oh, treacherous heart! Fye upon thee, fye upon thee. God be merciful to me a sinner!

About two this afternoon we reached Limerick, a large garrison town, with a cathedral in it, about twenty-one English miles from Fourthfargus. The roads as we came along grew better; but the people much more subtle and designing. Here are also many beggars, which I impute to the want of parish provisions for them. At evening-prayer we went to the cathedral,

and returned public thanks for our safe arrival. The remainder of the night was spent in necessary business, refreshing our bodies, religious conversation, and in writing some things I stood in need of.

Good God! Where was I last Saturday? In hunger, cold, and thirsting; but now I enjoy fulness of bread, and all things convenient for me. God grant I may not, Jeshurun like, wax fat and kick. Perhaps it is more difficult to know how to abound, than how to want. But I endeavour to receive both with thanksgiving.

Sunday, November 20. Having sent last night to inform doctor Burscough, bishop of Limerick, that I was lately arrived, at his lordship's appointment I waited on him this morning, and was received with the utmost candour and civility. At his lordship's request, I preached this morning at the cathedral, to a very numerous audience, who seemed universally affected, and full of expectation that I would preach in the afternoon; but Providence did not seem to open a door. But why should not a strange minister always offer his service? I think it is a wrong piece of modesty not to do it. For a sermon from a stranger may do more good than many from those the people are constantly used to.

After sermon the mayor sent twice to invite me, but I was preengaged to the bishop, who kindly invited both me and my friend, thanked me for my sermon, and offered me the free use of his palace, and would have insisted on my accepting of it, had I not told his lordship I was to leave Limerick in the morning. Oh, into what a wealthy place has my good God brought me! How does he every where command some or other to receive me! As I was eating at dinner, I was meditating on the divine goodness in spreading such a table for me, when last Sunday I was in danger almost of perishing with hunger. But I thought at the same time, if this were so great a blessing, what an infinitely greater one will it be, after the troubles of this life, to

sit down and eat bread in the kingdom of God. O that I may be accounted worthy of that heavenly banquet!

TULLER-BRIDGE.

Monday, November 20. Went about Limerick town this morning, to despatch some necessary business; and found the good seed sown yesterday, had received a blessing from above, for all the inhabitants seemed alarmed, and looked most wishfully at me as I passed along. One substantial tradesman, in particular, even compelled me to come in, and showed me and my friend uncommon civilities, and told me how solicitous the people were for my staying longer. Another came to my inn, and begged me to come and see him, which I did; and the good bishop, when I went to take leave of his lordship, kissed me, and said these words, "Mr Whitefield, God bless you, I wish you success abroad. Had you staid in town, this house should have been your home."

About four in the afternoon, against much persuasion to the contrary, we left Limerick, and reached Tuller-bridge, about six miles distant from thence, by six o'clock, where I and my friend were agreeably refreshed, and spent the remainder of the evening in writing to some at Limerick, and strengthening one another, and blessing God for these fresh instances of his unmerited mercies. Who knows what a great matter this little fire may kindle? This I am assured of, God did not send me to Ireland for nothing.

BURRASS AND OSSERY.

Tuesday, November 21. Went on journeying before day, and came about five in the evening to Burrass and Ossery, twenty-five miles from Tuller-bridge.

In my way I had a short conference with a Roman catholic, who seemed more knowing than the generality of those of that persuasion, but sadly misguided. My main drift was to convince him he was imposed upon. "Am I?" says he, with great earnestness. "Did I know that, I would follow him, *i. e.* the priest, no longer."

As far as I can find by all I converse with, they place religion in being of the Protestant or Roman catholic communion, and are quite ignorant of the nature of inward purity and holiness of heart. Lord, the christian world is cast into a deep sleep. Send forth, I beseech thee, some faithful and true pastors to awaken them out of it!

DUBLIN.

Thursday, November 22. Came forwards last night, to a place called Neas, thirty-three miles from Burrass and Ossery, and reached Dublin about noon, without the least fatigue or weariness. Blessed be God, he causes me to renew my strength, or otherwise it would not be thus with me.

Two things I can remark much for the credit of Ireland, that the roads, especially to Dublin, are surprisingly good, and provisions exceeding cheap. A person may travel without much expense.

Friday, November 24. Went to-day with Mr Bradford, brother to Mr Bradford of Georgia, to visit doctor Delany, who most kindly received me, and invited me to dine with him on Sunday. Some other part of the day I was necessarily obliged to go and see the busy part of Dublin; but the more I see of the world, the more I grow sick of it every day. God grant this sickness may increase!

Sunday, November 26. Preached twice to-day at the churches of Warborough and St Andrew's, I believe with success; for God enabled me to speak with power; and the people, as it were, not only hung upon me to hear me in the morning, but also flocked to the church where I preached in the afternoon; so that it was like a London congregation. Great good might be done in Dublin, by preaching charity sermons for the establishing protestant schools.

Tuesday, November 28. By the advice, and through the introduction of doctor Delany, I waited on doctor Rundel, bishop of Londonderry, and on his grace the archbishop of Armagh, lord primate of all Ireland. The former engaged me to dine with him on the morrow if

I staid in town; the latter to dine with him at three in the afternoon, at which time I waited on his grace, and was courteously received both by him and his clergy. Having heard of me, as the bishop of Derry told me, from some friend at Gibraltar.

Now God begins to show me why he so visited me in the ship. Sweetest Jesus give me humility, and I shall see yet greater things than these!

ENGLAND — PARK-GATE.

Thursday, November 30. After near twelve months' absence from London, three months from Georgia, and a pleasant passage of twenty-four hours from Dublin, to my inexpressible comfort, God brought me to Park-gate, and so fulfilled a promise which was pressed upon my heart last Innocents-day, in Hampshire, when I was under a great concern what my mother would say to the resolution I had then made to go to Georgia.—“Rachel weeping for her children, refused to be comforted for her children, because they were not. Thus saith the Lord, refrain thy voice from weeping, and thine eyes from tears, for thy work shall be rewarded; and there is hope in thine end, saith the Lord, that thy children shall come again to their own border.” Jer. xxxi. 15—17. Many other promises there are which I have laid up in my heart. I pray God I may be so blessed as to believe, for there certainly will be a fulfilling of these things which God by his Spirit hath spoken unto my soul.

NANTWICH.

Friday, December 1. Rode from Park-gate to Nantwich, in hopes of seeing my old friend Mr Salmon, but God was pleased to disappoint me. However, he enlarged my heart, and enabled me to write several letters to friends at Dublin; and I now, as I have often done before, make this remark, “that God never disappoints us one way, but he opens a door to do good in another.”

MANCHESTER.

Saturday, December 2. Reached Manchester by four this afternoon, and was much edified by dear Mr Clayton's judicious christian conversation, for the benefit of which, I came so far out of my way.

Sunday, December 3. Preached twice at Mr Clayton's chapel to a thronged and very attentive audience, especially in the afternoon, assisted with six more ministers in administering the blessed sacrament to three hundred communicants. Never did I see a table more richly spread, nor a greater order and decency observed. Blessed be God for my coming to Manchester; I hope it has greatly benefitted and strengthened my soul.— This has been a sabbath indeed! May it prepare me for that eternal rest which awaits the children of God!

STONE.

Monday, December 4. Set out at daybreak and got to Stone, thirty-four miles from Manchester, by five in the evening; was a little fatigued, but quite refreshed by the morning. Blessed be God for these conveniences. Oh, that I may always look upon myself as a stranger and a sojourner upon earth!

Friday, December 8. After having rode thirty-six miles on Tuesday, and twenty-four on Wednesday, on Thursday, about three in the afternoon, reached St Alban's. In the morning I set out for London, and was agreeably surprised with the sight of some of my christian friends on the road, who were coming to meet me, which put me in mind of St Paul's friends meeting him at the three taverns, and I, like him, was not a little comforted. Oh, that I may, like him also, be willing to follow my master wheresoever he shall be pleased to call me, not counting even my life dear unto myself, so that I may finish my course with joy!

Shall I, for fear or feeble man,
Thy spirt's course in me restrain?
Or undismayed in deed and word
Be a true witness to my Lord?

Aw'd by a mortal's frown, shall I
Conceal the word of God most high?
How then before thee shall I dare
To stand, or how thy anger hear?

No; let man rage! since thou wilt spread
Thy shadowing wings around my head:
Since in all pain thy tender love
Will still my sweet refreshment prove.

Saviour of men! thy searching eye
Does all my inmost thoughts descry :
Doth ought on earth my wishes raise?
Or the world's favour, or its praise?

The love of Christ does me constrain,
To seek the wand'ring souls of men ;
With cries, entreaties, tears to save,
To snatch them from the grasping grave.

For this let men revile my name,
No cross I shun, I fear no shame ;
All hail reproach, and welcome pain !
Only thy terrors, Lord, restrain.

My life, my blood I here present,
If for thy truth they may be spent,
Fulfil thy sov'reign counsel, Lord :
Thy will be done ! thy name ador'd !

Give me thy strength, O God of power !
Then let winds blow, or thunders roar,
Thy faithful witness will I be—
'Tis fix'd ! I can do all thro' thee !

A CONTINUATION
 OF THE
 REV. MR. WHITEFIELD'S
 JOURNAL

FROM
 HIS ARRIVAL AT LONDON,
 TO HIS DEPARTURE FROM THENCE ON HIS WAY TO
 GEORGIA.

TO THE
 REV MR GEORGE WHITEFIELD.

BROTHER in Christ, and well belov'd,
 Attend, and add thy pray'r to mine;
 As Aaron call'd, yet inly mov'd,
 To minister in things divine.

Faithful, and often own'd of God,
 Vessel of grace, by Jesus us'd;
 Stir up the gift on thee bestow'd,
 The gift by hallow'd hands transfus'd.

Fully thy heavenly mission prove,
 And make thy own election sure;
 Rooted in faith, and hope, and love,
 Active to work, and firm t'endure.

Scorn to contend with flesh and blood,
 And trample on so mean a foe;
 By stronger fiends in vain withstood,
 Dauntless to nobler conquests go.

Go where the darkest tempest low'rs ;
 Thy foes, triumphant wrestler foil ;
 Thrones, principalities, and powers,
 Engage, o'ercome, and take the spoil.

The weapons of thy warfare take,
 With truth and meekness arm'd ride on ;
 Mighty, through God, hell's kingdom shake,
 Satan's strong holds, through God, pull down.

Humble each vain aspiring boast,
 Intensely for God's glory burn ;
 Strongly declare the sinner lost,
 Self-righteousness o'erturn, o'erturn.

Tear the bright idol from his shrine,
 Nor suffer him on earth to dwell ;
 T' usurp the place of blood Divine,
 But chase him to his native hell.

Be all into subjection brought,
 The pride of man let faith abase ;
 And captivate his every thought,
 And force him to be sav'd by grace.

CHARLES WESLEY.

Friday, December 8. About noon I reached London, was received with much joy by my christian friends, and joined with them in psalms and thanksgiving for my safe arrival. My heart was greatly enlarged hereby.

In the evening went to a truly christian society in Fetter-lane, and perceived God had greatly watered the seed sown by my ministry, when last at London. The Lord increase it more and more.

Saturday, December 9. Waited this morning on the archbishop of Canterbury, and the bishop of London, and met with a favourable reception.

Sunday, December 10. When I was on board the Mary, those particular parts of the book of Jeremiah, which relate to the opposition he met with from the false prophets, were deeply impressed upon my soul ; and now I begin to see the wisdom of God in it, for five churches have been already denied me, and some of the clergy, if possible, would oblige me to depart

out of these coasts ; but I rejoice in this opposition, it being a certain sign, that a more effectual door will be opened, since there are so many adversaries.

However, I had an opportunity of preaching in the morning at St Helen's, and at Islington in the afternoon, to large congregations indeed, with great demonstration of the spirit, and with power.

Here seems to be a great pouring out of the spirit ; and many, who were awakened by my preaching a year ago, are now grown strong men in Christ, by the ministrations of my dear friends and fellow-labourers, John and Charles Wesley. Blessed be God, I rejoice in the coming of the kingdom of his dear son.

The old doctrine about justification by faith only, I found much revived, and many letters had been sent concerning it to me, all which I providentially missed of ; for now I come unprejudiced, and can the more easily see who is in the right ; and who dares assert that we are not justified in the sight of God, merely by an act of faith in Jesus Christ, without any regard to works past, present, or to come ?

In the evening I went to Fetter-lane society, where we had (what might not improperly be called) a love-feast, eating a little bread and water, and spending about two hours in singing and prayers, and I found my heart greatly united with the brethren. Surely a primitive spirit is reviving amongst us. May God knit my heart to theirs more and more !

Sunday, December 24. Preached twice, and went in the evening to Crooked-lane society, where God enabled me to withstand several persons, who cavilled against the doctrine of the new birth ; but the passion wherewith they oppose is a demonstration, that they themselves have not experienced it. Lord make them partakers of it, for thy dear son's sake.

After I left Crooked-lane, I went and expounded to a company at Mr B.'s, in Little Britain ; then I went to another love-feast at Fetter-lane ; and, it being Christmas-eve, continued till near four in the morning in prayer, psalms, and thanksgiving, with many truly

christian brethren, and my heart was much enlarged and full of love. God gave me a great spirit of supplication. Adored be his free grace in Christ Jesus, Amen and Amen.

Monday, December 25. About four went and prayed, and expounded to another society in Redcross-street, consisting of near two or three hundred people, and the room was exceeding hot. I had been watching unto prayer all night, yet God vouchsafed so to fill me with his blessed spirit, that I spoke with as great power as ever I did in my life. My body was weak, but I found a supernatural strength, and the truth of that saying, when I am weak, then I am strong.

At six I went to Crutched Friar's society, and expounded as well as I could, but perceived myself a little oppressed with drowsiness. How does the corruptible body weigh down the soul! When shall I be delivered from the burden of this flesh?

Preached thrice, and assisted in administering the sacrament the same day without going to sleep. God will make his power to be known in me. This day twenty-four years was I baptized. Lord! to what little purpose have I lived! However, I sealed my baptismal covenant with my dear Saviour's most blessed body and blood, and trust in his strength I shall keep and perform it. Amen, Amen.

Saturday, December 30. Preached nine times this week, and expounded near eighteen times, with great power and enlargement. Blessed be God! I am every moment employed from morning till midnight. There's no end of people's coming and sending to me, and they seem more and more desirous, like new-born babes, to be fed with the sincere milk of the word. What a great work has been wrought in the hearts of many within this twelvemonth! Now know I, that though thousands might come at first out of curiosity, yet God has prevented and quickened them by his free grace. Oh, that I could be humble and thankful!

Glory be to God that he fills me continually, not only with peace, but also joy in the Holy Ghost. Be-

fore my arrival, I thought I should envy my brethren's success in the ministry ; but blessed be God, I rejoice in it, and am glad to see Christ's kingdom come, whatsoever instruments God shall make use of to bring it about. Sometimes I perceive myself deserted for a little while, and much oppressed, especially before preaching, but comfort soon after flows in. The kingdom of God is within me. Oh ! free grace in Christ !

Sunday, December 31. Preached twice to large congregations, especially in the afternoon, at Spitalfields. I had a great hoarseness upon me, and was deserted before I went up into the pulpit, but God strengthened me to speak so as to be heard by all.

After I left Spitalfields, my cold being very great, I despaired of speaking much more that night ; but God enabled me to expound to two companies in Southwark, and I was never more enlarged in prayer in my whole life.—These words, “ And the power of the Lord was present to heal them,” were much pressed upon my soul, and indeed I believe it was, for many were pricked to the heart, and felt themselves to be sinners. Oh, that all the world knew and felt that !

Monday, January 1. Received the holy sacrament, preached twice, and expounded twice, and found this to be the happiest New-year's-day that I ever yet saw. Oh ! what mercies has the Lord shown me since this time twelvemonth ! and yet I shall see greater things than these. Oh, that my heart may be prepared to see them ! Oh, that my old things may pass away, and all things become new !

Had a love-feast with our friends at Fetter-lane, and spent the whole night in close prayer, psalms, and thanksgiving. God supported me without sleep. Oh, that our despisers were partakers of our joys !

Tuesday, January 3. Staid at home on purpose to receive those who wanted to consult me. Blessed be God, from seven in the morning till three in the afternoon, people came, some telling me what God had done for their souls, and others crying out, “ What shall we do to be saved ?” Being obliged to go out after this,

I referred several till Thursday. God enabled me to give them answers of peace! How does God work by my unworthy hands! His mercies melt me down. Oh, that I was thankful!

Thursday, January 4. Though my cold continued, and I feared it would prevent my speaking, yet God enabled me to expound with extraordinary power in a private society; and then to preach at Wapping chapel, so that the word pierced the hearers' souls; and afterwards I expounded and prayed for an hour and a half with great power and demonstration of the Spirit, and my heart was full of God. How immediately does Jesus Christ reward me for my poor services! As soon as my daily work is done, he says, "Enter thou into the joy of the Lord:"—he commands, and it is done.

Friday, January 5. Held a conference at Islington, concerning several things of very great importance, with seven true ministers of Jesus Christ, despised Methodists, whom God has brought together from the east and the west, the north and the south. What we were in doubt about, after prayer, we determined by lot, and every thing else was carried on with great love, meekness, and devotion. We continued in fasting and prayer till three o'clock, and then parted with a full conviction that God was going to do great things among us. Oh, that we may be any way instrumental to his glory; that he would make us vessels pure and holy, meet for our master's use!

Expounded twice afterwards in London with great power, and then was much enlarged for near an hour in prayer, in Fetter-lane society. The spirit of supplication increases in my heart daily. May it increase ever more and more!

Did not find the pity I ought, upon seeing a brother full of self-love. Lord enlarge my narrow heart, and give me that charity which rejoices not in iniquity, but in the truth. Perceived something a little bordering on envy towards my brother H. I find more and more that true humility consists in being submissive to those who are a little above or a little below us. Oh, when

shall I come to rejoice in other's gifts and graces as much as in my own! I am resolved to wrestle with Jesus Christ, by faith and prayer till he thus blesses me.

Saturday, January 6. Preached six times this week, and should have preached a seventh time, but one minister would not permit me; which caused me to pray for him most earnestly. Blessed be God I can say I love mine enemies.

Expounded twice or thrice every night this week. The Holy Ghost so powerfully worked upon my hearers, pricking their hearts, and melting them into such floods of tears, that a spiritual man said, he never saw the like before. God is with me of a truth. Adored be his unmerited goodness, I find his grace quickening me more and more every day. My understanding is more enlightened, my affections more enflamed, and my heart full of love towards God and man. Oh! that the scoffers of these last days were not only almost, but altogether such as I am, except these in-dwelling corruptions!

Sunday, January 7. Preached twice to-day, and expounded with great power to three societies, one of which I never visited before. God grant I may pursue the method of expounding and praying extempore. I find God blesses it more and more.

Had another love-feast, and spent the whole night in prayer and thanksgiving at Fetter-lane. There was a great pouring out of the spirit amongst the brethren: but I cannot say I was so full of joy as the last night we spent together.

Monday, January 8. Though I sat up all night, yet God carried me through the work of the day with about an hour's sleep. Expounded in the evening, and confuted a virulent opposer of the doctrine of the new birth, and justification by faith only; but what can be said to those that will not be convinced; Lord, open thou their hearts and eyes.

Spent the remainder of the evening with our bands, which are little combinations of six or more christians

meeting together to compare their experiences. Build ye up one another, even as also ye do. Confess your faults one to another, and pray for one another, that ye may be healed.

Tuesday, January 10. Staid at home again to day to talk with those that came to consult me, and found that God had awakened several, and excited in them a hunger and thirst after righteousness by my sermon on the power of Christ's resurrection: and have ye received the Holy Ghost? Every day I hear of somebody or another quickened to a sense of the divine life. Oh, what abundant reason have I to be thankful!

This evening I preached a sermon at Great St Helen's, for erecting a church for the Saltzburghers, and collected thirty-three pounds! Blessed be God! The people gave most readily, many wishing they had more to give; for which we afterwards prayed and gave thanks.

OXFORD.

Wednesday, January 7. Slept about three hours, rose at five, set out at ten, and reached Oxford by five in the evening. As I entered the city, I called to mind the mercies I had received since I left it. They are more than I am able to express. Oh, that my heart may be melted down by a sense of them, Amen, Lord Jesus. Spent the remainder of the evening very agreeably with several christian friends. May God sanctify our meeting!

Friday, January 12. Breakfasted with sixteen or seventeen christian brethren; expounded and read prayers at the castle to many devout souls. Afterwards I waited on the bishop of Gloucester, who received me very kindly. Waited on the master of Pembroke, afterwards on the archdeacon. Went to public worship at Pembroke. Supped, prayed, and sung psalms with a room full of brethren at Mr F.'s; then adjourned to Corpus Christi college, where God assisted me to talk clearly of the new birth, and justification by faith alone, with one that opposed it. Lord, open thou our eyes, that we may prove what is that acceptable

and perfect will of God ! Received the holy sacrament at St Mary's, expounded with great power at Mr F.'s, went with the other candidates for holy orders to subscribe to the articles, and secretly prayed that we all might have our names written in the book of life. Drank tea with a well-disposed gentleman commoner, and had close conversation with many others at Corpus Christi college. I enjoyed great tranquillity of soul, and had much reason to bless God for sending me to the university. Oh ! that I may be prepared for receiving the Holy Ghost to-morrow by the imposition of hands. Amen, Lord Jesus, Amen.

Sunday, January 14. This, blessed be God, has been a day of fat things. Rose in the morning, and prayed and sung psalms lustily, and with a good courage ; and afterwards was ordained priest at Christ's church. Before, I was a little dissipated, but at imposition of hands, my mind was in an humble frame, and I received grace in the holy sacrament. That I might begin to make proof of my ministry, I preached, and administered the sacrament at the castle ; and preached in the afternoon at St Alban's to a crowded congregation. The church was surrounded with gownsmen of all degrees, who, contrary to their custom, stood attentive at the windows during my sermon. God enabled me to preach with the demonstration of the spirit, and with power, and quite took away my hoarseness, so that I could lift up my voice like a trumpet. After sermon, I joined in giving thanks to our good God for all the mercies he had conferred upon me ; then I read prayers at Carfax, expounded to a large and devout company, both of men and women, at a private house, and spent the remainder of the evening with thirteen more, where God gave me great cheerfulness of spirit.

LONDON.

Monday, January 15. Took a most affectionate leave of my dear Oxon brethren, set out at seven, reached London by five, spent the evening in answering some letters, especially one from Howel Harris, an instrument, under God, of doing much good in Wales.

—Read a pamphlet written against me by a clergyman, I bless God, without any emotion; prayed most heartily for the author; opened the corruptions of my heart to my brethren in bands, and felt great peace consequent thereupon.

Tuesday, January 16. After much opposition, read prayers, and preached to a thronged and affected audience at St Helen's. After this I expounded twice to two companies, and prayed by name for the author of the pamphlet; left my auditors in tears, and went home full of love, and joy, and peace which passeth all understanding. Oh, that he felt what I do! Happy, unspeakably happy, would he then be!

Wednesday, January 17. Dined with and convinced several that were prejudiced against extempore prayer. —Waited on the trustees, and was most kindly received.—Afterwards much assisted in expounding twice at Mr C.'s.—The more I am opposed, the more God enlightens my understanding. So it was formerly, so it is now.—Spent the remainder of the evening at Fetter-lane society; and God enabled me to tell of some experiences, which I hope comforted their hearts.

Thursday, January 18. Perceived myself much disordered, so that I was obliged to lie down to sleep. But afterwards God greatly enlarged my heart, and enabled me to expound to two societies. I made a collection for two poor housekeepers.—I find action is the best way to take all oppression off the spirits. God will meet and bless us when doing his work.

Friday, January 19. Did some necessary business for Georgia, and spent the afternoon in visiting some dissenting brethren, who are christians indeed. But, as such, I acknowledge all who love our Lord Jesus in sincerity and truth.

Saturday, January 20. Preached three times this week, and expounded to about sixteen thronged companies, wherein God gave me great power and success.—Had many contributions sent me in for the orphan-house.

Sunday, January 21. Went this morning and re-

ceived the sacrament at the hands of the minister who wrote against me. Blessed be God I do not feel the least resentment against, but a love for him. For I believe he has a zeal for God, though, in my opinion, not according to knowledge. Oh, that I could do him any good!

Preached twice with great power and clearness in my voice to two thronged congregations, especially in the afternoon, when I believe near a thousand people were in the church-yard, and hundreds more returned home that could not come in. Thus God magnifies his power, most when most opposed.

Expounded twice afterwards, where the people pressed most vehemently to hear the word. God enabled me to speak with the demonstration of the Spirit, and with power, and the remainder of the evening, filled me with a humble sense of his infinite mercies. I think I am never more humble than when exalted. By the grace of God I am what I am. Oh, that I could be thankful!

Monday, January 22. Spent all the day in necessary business for my poor flock, and in going about doing good. In the evening I expounded to three several societies, one of which was the most polite I ever yet saw; but God enabled me to speak upon the doctrine of the new birth; and however some might mock, yet others, I believe, were affected, especially three Quakers, who afterwards came and paid me a visit, and glorified God on my behalf. Oh how thankful, how humble ought I to be!—God fills me with love, peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost. Such is his free grace in Christ Jesus!

Tuesday, January 23. Staid at home to-day as usual, to receive people, and still had the comfort of hearing many coming to me, who have been awakened to a sense of the new birth. What reason have I to bless God for sending me to England! How does he daily set his seal to my ministry! Praise him all the host of his, let every thing that hath breath praise the Lord.

Received a packet of letters from my dear friend H—m, by which I find the infinite wisdom of God more and more, in sending me to England. The poor people of Savannah love me still most affectionately. But the colony seems to be at a low ebb. Poor Georgia! when thou art universally despised, and quite despairing of human help, then will God manifest his mighty arm in thy salvation.

Read prayers and preached at St Helen's, with great power, to a crowded and attentive audience.—Was enabled to expound to two companies, and collected above forty shillings for the orphan-house of Georgia. I could wish to have it built with mites. Oh, how does the Holy Ghost cause me to joy in God! How does he bring me acquainted more and more with his faithful servants! Not unto me, O Lord, not unto me, but to thy name be the glory!

Wednesday, January 24. Preached a charity sermon, went to Newington to see doctor Watts, and returned in the evening and expounded with power to two companies. Wrote several letters to my friends at Savannah, and was filled with the Holy Ghost; and oh, that all that deny the promise of the Father, might thus receive it themselves!

Thursday, January 25. Received the sacrament at Bow, where four of my opposers administered; one of whom was the person that wrote the self-answering pamphlet against me. At first a thought darted into my mind that they were of a persecuting spirit, but I soon checked it, and was filled with love towards them. God grant they may be like minded towards me.

At two in the afternoon read prayers and preached at Christ-church, Spitalfields, for the orphan-house.—The congregation was not so large as might be expected, and that of the poorest sort, so that I began to doubt. But wherefore did I fear? For God enabled me to preach with power, and twenty-five pounds were collected, to our great surprise, and to the glory of our great and good God; for which we kneeled down and gave most hearty thanks.

This done, I went and gave a word or two of exhortation, and prayed to a company that waited for me. Then I expounded with uncommon power to another society in Leadenhall-street, and collected very near five pounds for the orphan-house. Blessed be God through Christ.

About eight I went to another society, after nine to a third, at both which I spoke with the demonstration of the spirit, and made collections for the orphan-house, and was filled with the Holy Ghost, which very much strengthened my body, and made my feet like hart's feet. The strength God gives me would surprise me, did I not know what a gracious master I serve.

Received a letter from Edinburgh, from a truly pious gentleman, who tells me his heart was knit to me most strongly, upon the reading of my Journal. How many are there, whom I know not, praying for me in secret! Surely God intends to bring mighty things to pass. Is not his strength made perfect in weakness?

Friday, January 26. Waited upon an opposing clergyman, and had a conference with him of near two hours. His grand objection was against our private societies, and using extempore prayer, which he grounded on the authority of the canons, and the act of Charles II. In answer, I showed that that act was entirely levelled against seditious schismatical meetings, contrary to the church of England, which confines us to a form in public worship only. He replied, that ours was public worship; but this I deny. For ours were societies never intended to be set up in opposition to the public worship, by law established: but only in imitation of the primitive christians, who continued daily with one accord in the temple, and yet in fellowship building up one another, and exhorting one another from house to house. Went with Mr Seward to Bexley, about ten miles off London, where I preached to a large congregation, to their great comfort, and afterwards spent the evening most delightfully in religious conversation, and in singing psalms and hymns, and spiritual songs with Mr Delamot's family, who

seem almost with one accord ready to receive Jesus Christ. A happier household have I seldom found, or one that more resembles that of Martha, Mary, and their brother Lazarus.

Saturday, January 27. Slept but little to night, as well as the night before, but was much strengthened without it by the Holy Spirit. Rose about five, spent above an hour most agreeably in prayer, singing and reading the scriptures with the church in Mr Delamot's house; some of whom, after the example of their Lord, passed the whole night in the same delightful employment.

Came to London about nine in the morning, and expounded twice in Beech-lane, where I believe near seven hundred people were present; collected five pounds for the orphan-house.

Had extraordinary comforts this week, heard much of what God has done abroad for me in other places, where I am not known in the flesh, and desired greatly to be humble and thankful.

Received the sacrament at Crooked-lane, but was a little dissipated; however, I found I received Christ, and fed on him in my heart, by faith with thanksgiving. Afterwards went and preached at Ironmongers' almshouses at St Catherine's in the afternoon; afterwards expounded to two large companies in the Minories, with such demonstration of the Spirit as I never spoke with before.—I offered Jesus Christ freely to sinners, and many, I believe, were truly pricked to the heart. Now, my friends, your prayers are heard, God has given me a double portion of his Spirit indeed.—Oh, free grace in Christ Jesus.—With what love, peace, and joy, does God fill this soul of mine!—Lord I am not worthy, but thy mercies in Christ Jesus are infinite.

Monday, January 29. Expounded twice, and sat up till near one in the morning, with my honoured brother and fellow-labourer, John Wesley, in conference with two clergymen of the church of England, and some other strong opposers of the doctrine of the new birth. God enabled me with great simplicity to

declare what he had done for my soul, which made them look upon me as a madman. We speak what we do know, and testify that we have seen, and they receive not our witness. Now, therefore, I am fully convinced there is a fundamental difference between us and them. They believe only an outward Christ, we farther believe that he must be inwardly formed in our hearts also. But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God, for they are foolishness unto him; neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned.

Tuesday, January 30. Preached at Duke's-place and St Helen's to crowded audiences, and afterwards expounded twice on Dowgate-hill, where the people pressed mightily to come in. The minister of the parish threatens the master of the house with a prosecution, though it will be hard for him to prove such societies any ways contrary to the laws either of God or man.

GRAVESEND.

Wednesday, January 31. Slept about two hours, rose at three in the morning, and went with some christian friends in a boat to Gravesend, where I have been long expected. God inclined the ministers' hearts to let me have the use of both the pulpits, and I preached and read prayers at three in the afternoon at the church without the town; and did the same at the church in the town, and the people, as elsewhere, hung upon me to hear the word of God. God is with me wherever I go.

Thursday, February 1. Read prayers and expounded on the third of St John; expounded at a private house in the afternoon, and read prayers and expounded a third time on the conversion of St Paul in the evening. —I had great freedom of speech, was filled with exceeding great joy, at the consideration of what great things God yet continues to do for my soul; and yet I shall see greater things than these.

I spent the remainder of the evening in singing hymns, and religious conversation; took boat about

eleven, spoke warmly to the passengers, and came to London rejoicing about five in the morning. The Lord preserve my going out, and my coming in, from this time forth for evermore.

LONDON.

Friday, February 2. Slept about two hours, rose and went and preached at Islington, and collected twenty-two pounds for my orphan-house.

Had a great number of communicants, and was told my preaching was attended with uncommon power. This is the first time I have preached without notes, (for when I preached at Deptford and Gravesend, I only repeated a written sermon) but I find myself now, as it were, constrained to do it.

Expounded in the evening, and collected three pounds for the orphan-house, at Mr Abbot's; preached extempore with great freedom at Wapping-chapel; then expounded to another society, and returned home without fatigue or weariness. How does God deal with me! He gives me a heaven upon earth, and makes my heart leap for joy almost continually. Oh, that all who now oppose it, were partakers of this joy!

Saturday, February 3. Staid at home this day on purpose to settle my private affairs; and, blessed be God, did it greatly to my satisfaction. Was very much composed in spirit, began a new society at the house of Mr M—n; and was much assisted in expounding twice at Beech-lane to two companies, making in all near a thousand people.—Visited a sick brother, came home full of peace, and love, and joy in the Holy Ghost.

Near nine times has God enabled me to preach this week, and to expound twelve or fourteen times; near forty pounds, I believe, have been collected for the orphan-house. I find I gain greater light and knowledge, by preaching extempore, so that I fear I should quench the Spirit, did I not go on to speak as he gives me utterance.

Sunday, February 4. Had a comfortable night's rest; was warmed much by talking to an almost christian, that came to ask me certain questions.—Preached

in the morning at St George's in the east, collected eighteen pounds for the orphan-house, and had, I believe, six hundred communicants, which highly offended the officiating curate. Poor man, I pitied, and prayed for him sincerely.

Preached again at Christ-church, Spitalfields, gave thanks, and sung psalms at a private house.—Went thence to St Margaret's, Westminster; but something breaking belonging to the coach, could not get thither till the middle of prayers.—Went through the people to the minister's pew, but finding it locked, I returned to the vestry till the sexton could be found. Being there informed that another minister intended to preach, I desired several times that I might go home: my friends would by no means consent, telling me I was appointed by the trustees to preach, and that if I did not, the people would go out of the church; at my request, some went to the trustees, churchwardens, and minister; and whilst I was waiting for an answer, and the last psalm singing, a man came with a wand in his hand, whom I took for the proper church-officer, and told me I was to preach; I, not doubting but the minister was satisfied, followed him to the pulpit; and God enabled me to preach with greater power than I had done all the day before.

After this, prayed with, and gave a word or two of exhortation to a company that waited for me, then took a little bodily refreshment, and then went to a love-feast in Fetter-lane, where I spent the whole night in watching unto prayer, and discussing several important points with many truly christian friends. About four in the morning we went all together and broke bread at a poor sick sister's room, and so we parted, I hope, in a spirit not unlike that of the primitive christians.

This has been a sabbath indeed! How has God owned me before near twelve thousand people this day!—How has he strengthened my body!—How has he filled and satisfied my soul! Now know I that I did receive the Holy Ghost at imposition of hands, for I feel it as much as Elijah did when Elijah dropped his

mantle. Nay, others see it also; and my opposers, would they but speak, cannot but confess that God is with me of a truth. Wherefore then do they fight against God?

Monday, February 5. Went about gathering for my poor flock, had a little time to write my Journal, was somewhat weak part of the day, but grew strong by expounding to four companies at night. I always get strength by working. What great things has God done for my soul! Oh, that I could praise him with my whole heart!

Tuesday, February 6. Was refreshed much this morning, and found that the sleep of a labouring man was sweet. Waited on the bishop of Gloucester with brother John Wesley, and received his lordship's liberal benefaction for Georgia.

Went to St Helen's, where Satan withstood me greatly. For on a sudden I was deserted, and my strength went from me; but I thought it was the devil's doing, and therefore was resolved to resist him steadfast in the faith. Accordingly, though I was exceeding sick in reading the prayers, and almost unable to speak when I entered the pulpit, yet God gave me courage to begin, and before I had done I waxed warm and strong in spirit, and offered Jesus Christ freely to all that would lay hold on him by faith. Many, I believe, were touched to the quick, for they seemed to feel what was spoken, and said hearty and loud Amens to my sentences. The church was greatly thronged, and after I had done, prayers were put up on all sides for my safe journey and return. Surely these are not curious hearers! If they are, why do they follow more and more for such a continuance? No, many conversions have been wrought in their hearts. God has set his seal to my ministry, and I trust they will be my joy and crown of rejoicing in the day of the Lord Jesus. Oh, the riches of God's free grace in Christ to the chief of sinners! Oh, that I fully felt the sense of these words!

After this the people waited in great companies to

see and follow me; but I got from them by going out at a back door. Perhaps hereafter I may be let out in the same manner to escape the fury of mine enemies. As my good God pleases.

In coming along I perceived myself more and more strengthened, and was much comforted in reading a letter sent me by an excellent saint, who loves me in the bowels of Jesus Christ. About nine at night I expounded with great enlargement at Dowgate-hill to a most crowded audience. Tongue cannot express what power God gave me, or how the hearts of the poor people were affected. They sighed and mourned, and wept sorely, when I mentioned my departure from them, though but for a season. I exhorted them particularly not to forsake the assembling themselves together, notwithstanding the people of the house had been threatened with a prosecution; but so far as our opposers are permitted to go, shall they go, but no farther. I never was more opposed, never met with so great success, never was filled with such a portion of God's Holy Spirit. My dear christian friends waited, at my coming home, to salute me. God filled me with love and joy, and I waxed stronger and stronger in spirit, to their and my own unspeakable comfort in Christ Jesus our Lord. All love, all glory be to the ever blessed Trinity, now and for evermore. Amen.

Wednesday, February 7. Spent the morning in providing things for my journey, and taking leave of my dear christian friends, whom I love as my own soul. Had several presents made me by such as God had worked upon by my ministry; and after having prayed and sung psalms in several christian houses, about two I set out for Windsor, desiring to be thankful for those marvellous great kindnesses God had shown me in this city. I perceived my heart so nearly knit to my dear friends, that was it the divine will, I should gladly continue here; but I must go into every place and city where I have been already, for therefore am I sent. Lord, send thy angel before me to prepare my way. But wherefore should I doubt, since so many thousands

are continually praying for me? The good Lord pour down upon them the choicest of his blessings!

WINDSOR.

Got hither about six in the evening, and was joyfully received by several christian friends, who were waiting for me. About seven I was taken very ill indeed, but God strengthened me to go out, and I expounded with great freedom and power in the school-house to a great number of people, who were apprized of my coming, and, I believe, felt what I spoke; for some wept, and many expressed their thankfulness for my exposition. Not unto me, O Lord, not unto me, but unto thy name be all the glory.

Being much refreshed by talking for God, I spent the remainder of the evening in writing to some dear christian friends, and in singing, praying, and conversing with others, as likewise with the people of the inn where we lodged.

Thursday, February 8. Breakfasted, prayed, and sung a hymn at the house of Mr D.'s, who kindly invited both me and my friends. Some other persons sent for me to their houses, and, I believe, much good might be done here, but I must not stay by the way. Lord, lo I come: only I beseech thee open an effectual door for preaching thy gospel, whithersoever thou shalt send me. Even so Lord Jesus. Amen.

I find much service might be done to religion on journeys, if we have but courage to show ourselves christians in all places. Others sing songs in public-houses; why should not we sing psalms? and when we give the servants money, why may we not with that give them a little book, and some good advice? I know by experience it is very beneficial. God grant this may be always my practice!

BASINGSTOKE.

Left Windsor about ten in the morning, dined at Bagshot, and reached Basingstoke at five in the evening. Not meeting with our friends, who were to come from Dummer, I wrote to some christian brethren I had left behind me, and afterwards was agreeably surprised

by several who came uninvited to see me. After a little conversation, I perceived they were desirous to hear the word of God, and being in a large dining-room in the public-house, I gave notice I would expound to as many as would come. In a short time I had above a hundred very attentive hearers, to whom I expounded for above an hour, for which they were very thankful. Blessed be God for this opportunity. I hope I shall learn more and more every day, that no place is amiss for preaching the gospel. God forbid that the word of God should be bound, because some out of a misguided zeal deny the use of their churches. For though they bid me no more speak to the people in this way, yet I cannot but speak the things that I have seen and felt in my own soul. The more I am bid to hold my peace, the more earnestly will I lift up my voice like a trumpet, and tell the people what must be done in them before they can be finally saved by Jesus Christ.

Friday, February 9. After breakfast and prayer with the family where we lodged, I set out for Dummer (a parish once for a little while under my care) and met with near a dozen christian brethren, with whom we took exceeding sweet counsel, prayed, and sung psalms, and eat our bread with gladness and singleness of heart. I wish all knew how cheerful we, that are beginning to be christians, live! and if the beginning be so sweet, what must the end of believing be? Oh, the goodness of God in thus bringing me back to the places where I have been already! Lord melt down my frozen heart with a sense of thy unmerited love. Amen, Amen.

After having wrote several letters, I returned with my friends to Basingstoke, where I had appointed to expound. Accordingly, in the evening I went to a large room prepared for that purpose, and expounded for an hour. The place was very much thronged, many were very noisy, and others did us the honour of throwing up stones at the windows; but I spoke so much the louder being convinced some good must come out from a place where opposition is. I should doubt whether I was a true minister of Christ, was I not or-

posed; and I find it does me much good, for it drives me nearer to my lord and master, Jesus Christ, with whom I long to dwell.

After exposition, near twenty friends came to visit me, and two young men in particular, (once leaders of the religious society, but since fallen back.) They came, I believe, with a design to puzzle me about the doctrine of regeneration; but alas, they soon showed what strangers they were to it. For one was so full of zeal that he could not keep his seat; and both were entirely ignorant of the indwelling of the Spirit. One thing they took care to show as much as possible. viz. That they had read the fathers, I suppose the English translations, but at the same time denied experience in religion. Poor men! I pitied and told them, how they rested in learning, falsely so called, while they were strangers to the power of godliness in their hearts. At last finding no probability of convincing them, and being called away to supper, I and my friends took our leave in love, with true concern to see what an unhappy spirit our opposers are of. Afterwards we prayed for them, and endeavoured to bless God for making us to triumph, through his dear Son, in every place.

Saturday, February 10. Breakfasted with some friends, and after family prayer, went with my dear brethren, Mr Kinchin and Mr Hutchings, to Dummer, where I spent most of the day in visiting that poor flock from house to house, who rejoiced exceedingly at the sight of me, and had not forgotten their former love. Their simplicity delighted me and my friend Seward much, and God enlarged my heart greatly to praise him, and to pray for my dear absent brethren. Indeed I love them in the bowels of Jesus Christ.

About four in the afternoon we returned to Basingstoke, in order to expound. And near three large rooms were filled. We expected ill treatment ere we returned home, and some did begin to interrupt me; but God enabled me to speak with such irresistible power, that they were quite struck dumb and con-

founded. Many said we will never oppose again. Others said, they would follow me whithersoever I should go; and the hearts of God's children, as well as my own, were filled with joy unspeakable. This night I hope salvation is come to this place.

After exposition, many christian friends came to see me in a most affectionate manner, and about nine at night we set out for Dummer. But no one can tell what enlargement of heart God gave me. My soul was full of ineffable comfort and joy in the Holy Ghost. I poured out my heart before the throne of grace as I rode by the way, and felt the Spirit of God working in me mightily, and enabling me to intercede most earnestly for my dear friends. Lord, hear my prayers, and let my cry come unto thee. In a short time we reached Dummer, and after having taken a little refreshment, I went to bed full of love, and rejoicing for the great things God had done for my soul.

Sunday, Feb. 11. Rose full of love and joy, but afterwards on a sudden was deserted, and then taken very ill in body. I struggled just like one in his last agonies, and longed to stretch myself into God. After having vomited several times, I was obliged to go to bed; and it would have melted any one down to see my dear friends, especially my dearest Mr H—s, weeping and praying around me. Oh, how did I long to be dissolved, and be with Jesus Christ! How did I wish for the wings of an eagle, that I might fly away to heaven! But that happy hour is not yet come. There are many promises to be fulfilled in me, many souls to be called, many sufferings to be endured, before I go hence. Father, thy will be done.

After having fallen asleep for a short time, I arose and went to public worship, and preached and administered the sacrament, but without any life or power.

My sickness still continuing after service, I went to bed again full of peace, but weak in body, oppressed much in my head, and quite shut up till near five at night. At which time, by the advice of my brother Seward, I took courage, and though it rained hard,

rode with my dear friends to Basingstoke, where above five hundred were waiting to hear me expound ; but my indisposition continuing, brother Kinchin expounded in my stead. After this my spirits revived, my body was strengthened, and God gave me utterance, so that I spoke freely to near twenty people that came to converse with me, and to hear the word of God. How thankful ought I to be to my dear master for sending me hither. A most beneficial and comfortable meeting have I had with my dear christian friends, and many I hope, will have reason to bless God for what they have seen and heard. A vestry, I find, was called to stop my proceedings, and I hear I am to be presented to the diocesan. Several lies have been told in the news about my preaching at St Margaret's last Sunday. Blessed be God that I can rejoice in these lower marks of my discipleship. Wherever I go, God causeth me to triumph, knits the hearts of his people most closely to me, and makes me more than conqueror through his love. The comforts I enjoy within are inexpressible, they have a great effect upon my outward man, and make me of a cheerful countenance ; which recommends my master's service much. Oh, free grace in Christ Jesus !

SALISBURY.

Monday, February 12. Perceived myself perfectly recovered, and was much refreshed by the coming of many dear friends, with whom after I had breakfasted and prayed, I took a most affectionate leave ; called at Dummer, sung a hymn, prayed, and gave a word of exhortation to certain disciples that were there, and reached Salisbury with my companion in travel, Mr Seward, about six in the evening. Here I wrote several letters to my London and Basingstoke friends, and sent for Mr Chubb, in order to have a conference with him concerning his late book, but he happened not to be at home. Oh, that that unhappy man was turned from his erroneous principles ! For I fear, like Simon Magus, he has bewitched many about Salisbury with his false doctrines. Lord, suffer not thy people to

believe a lie, though they have held the truth in unrighteousness. Raise up, I beseech thee, some true pastors amongst them, who may acquaint them with the nature and necessity of the new birth, and point out to them the blessed Spirit, whereby they may have that repentance wrought in their souls, which the self-righteous Mr Chubb falsely asserts may be wrought in them by a moral persuasion.

STAPLEASHWIN, WILTS.

Tuesday, February 13. Thought when I rose to abide at Salisbury a few days, but finding it quite inconsistent with my other business, I left that place, after public worship, and paying a visit to an old disciple, my brother Wesley's mother, and reached Stapleashwin about six at night. After having refreshed ourselves, we intended to set forward towards Bath; but finding the people, at whose house we put up, were worthy, we altered our resolution. And our hostess having called in many of her neighbours, I prayed, conversed, and sung psalms with them for a considerable time, wrote some letters, and went to bed, not doubting but the Lord would cause me to dwell in safety. Who knows but some good may have been done here this night? But what have I to do with that? I am only to follow my Lord, who, wheresoever he came, talked of the one thing needful.

BATH AND BRISTOL.

Wednesday, February 14. After family prayer, and giving a word of exhortation, I set out for Bath, and was greatly comforted there with some christian brethren. I then waited on doctor C—y, desiring I might have the use of the abbey church to preach for the orphan-house, the trustees having obtained leave of the bishop before I went to Georgia. But he was pleased to give me an absolute refusal to preach either on that, or any other occasion, without a positive order from the king or bishop. I asked him his reasons. He said, "he was not obliged to give me any." Upon which, I took my leave, and retired with my friends, and prayed for him most fervently. The time will come,

says our Lord, when they shall thrust you out of their synagogues.

After dinner, other circumstances concurring, we thought God called us to Bristol. And with cheerfulness of heart, we reached that place about seven in the evening. But who can express the joy with which I was received? To add to my comfort, many letters came to my hands from London friends, which rejoiced me exceedingly. And what was the chiefest pleasure, somebody or other thought me considerable enough to write a letter in the "Weekly Miscellany" against me, and with several untruths, about my preaching at St Margaret's Westminster. Thou shalt answer for me, my Lord and my God. Yet a little while and we shall appear at the judgment seat of Christ. Then shall my innocence be made clear as the light, and my just dealings as the noon-day.

BRISTOL.

Thursday, February 15. Sat up till past one in the morning answering my dear friends' letters, having no time otherwise. Received a letter from a dear christian brother, wherein were these words, "I was told that Mr B—n said to Mr C—h, I believe the devil in hell is in you all. Whitefield has set the town on fire, and now he is gone to kindle a flame in the country. Shocking language for one who calls himself a minister of the gospel! But, my dear friend, I trust this will not move you, unless it is to pity him, and pray the more earnestly that he may experience the power of those truths he is now opposing, and have the same fire kindled in his breast, against which he is now so much enraged. For I trust I am persuaded, it is not a fire of the devil's kindling, but a holy fire that has proceeded from the holy and blessed Spirit. Oh, that such a fire may not only be kindled, but blow up into a flame all England, and all the world over!"

After having breakfasted and prayed with some religious friends, I went with Mr Seward to public worship; from thence to the reverend Mr G—s, minister of St Mary, Ratcliff, who, as I was in-

formed, had promised to lend me his church to preach in for the orphan-house. But he, in effect, gave me a refusal, telling me, that he could not lend his church without a special order from the chancellor. Upon this, I immediately waited upon the chancellor, to whom I had sent the night before. But he told me frankly, that "he would not give any positive leave, neither would he prohibit any one that should lend me a church: but he would advise me to withdraw to some other place till he had heard from the bishop, and not preach on that or any other occasion." I asked him his reasons. He answered, "Why will you press so hard upon me? The thing has given a general dislike." I replied, "Not the design of the orphan-house, even those that disagree with me in other particulars, approve of that. And as for the gospel, when was it preached without dislike?" Soon after this, I took my leave, and waited upon the reverend the dean, who received me with great civility. When I had shown him my Georgia accounts, and answered him a question or two about the colony, I asked him, "whether there could be any just objection against my preaching in churches for the orphan-house?" After a pause for a considerable time, he answered, "he could not tell." But somebody knocking at the door, he replied, "Mr Whitefield, I will give you an answer some other time; now I expect company." "Will you be pleased to fix any, sir?" said I. "I will send to you," says the dean. O christian simplicity, whither art thou fled! Why do not the clergy speak the truth, that it is not against the orphan-house, but against me and my doctrine, that their enmity is levelled. Had another come in his own name, him they would have received. But do thou, O Lord, behold their enmity, and grant unto me, and all thy despised servants, that with all boldness we may speak thy word.

About three in the afternoon, God having given me great favour in the jailer's eyes, I preached a sermon on the penitent thief to the poor prisoners in Newgate, and collected fifteen shillings for them. Many seemed

much affected, and I hope the power of the Lord was present to awaken them.

At seven I expounded for an hour with very great power to a young society, which God has caused to be established since I was in Bristol last; and many, I heard afterwards, were pricked to the heart, which was manifest enough by the tears that were shed by almost all that heard me. Blessed be God the good seed sown by my ministry, though but as a grain of mustard-seed, is now, being watered by the dew of heaven, beginning to grow into a great tree. Lord, this is thy doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes.

The lessons were very remarkable, and the people made an application for me. The first was the opposition made against Aaron's priesthood, and God's determining who was in the right, by causing his rod to blossom when the other rods produced nothing. So let it happen, O Lord, to me thy unworthy servant. The second was the eleventh chapter of St Paul's second epistle to the Corinthians, where the apostle recounted his sufferings for Christ, against the insinuations of the false apostles. Blessed be God in most of the things there recorded, I have, in some small degree, had fellowship with the apostle, and before I die, I doubt not but I shall sympathize with him in most other articles. While I was reading it, I could not forbear blushing much. The people were intent upon me, their eyes bespoke the language of their hearts: each seemed to say, thou art the man. Suffering is the best preferment.

Friday, February 16. Begun this morning to settle a daily exposition, and reading prayers to the prisoners in Newgate. I opened it by enlarging on the conversion of the jailer, and I trust the same good work will be experienced in this prison before I leave it.

Dined with a religious family, spent a considerable time in singing hymns, and prayer, visited and prayed with two choice servants of our blessed Lord, and expounded from five till near nine, to two thronged societies, one of which chiefly consisted of young men

whom God seems to have called to shine as lights in the world, in a crooked and perverse generation. Oh, now thankful ought I to be, for seeing these fruits of my poor labours!

Saturday, February 17. Read prayers and expounded the parable of the prodigal son at Newgate to a great number of people; and afterwards was much refreshed by the coming of a dear London friend, and the receipt of several letters; for the writers of which I, with many others, immediately kneeled down and gave thanks. One thing affected me much in their letters, viz. their news of a great opposer being given over by the physicians. Alas, poor man! We all prayed most heartily for him, knowing how shortly he must give an account of what he had most unjustly said and wrote against me and many true servants of Jesus Christ. Father, lay not this sin to his charge.

About one in the afternoon I went with my brother Seward, and another friend, to Kingswood, and was most delightfully entertained by an old disciple of the Lord. My bowels have long since yearned toward the poor colliers, who, as far as I can find, are very numerous, and yet are as sheep, having no shepherd. After dinner, therefore, I went upon a mount and spake to as many people as came unto me. They were upwards of two hundred. Blessed be God that I have now broke the ice; I believe I never was more acceptable to my Master than when I was standing to teach those hearers in the open fields. Some may censure me. But if I thus pleased men, I should not be the servant of Christ.

About five, we returned full of joy; and I wrote to the bishop of Bristol, as I had done before to the bishop of Bath and Wells, for leave to preach in his lordship's churches, for the benefit of the orphan-house. May God incline him to send me an answer of peace!

At seven, I went to expound to a society of young men for near two hours, and then came home with my friends, blessing and praising God.

Sunday, February 18. Arose this morning about six, being called up by near fifty young persons, whom I appointed to meet me at my sister's house, and with whom I spent above an hour in prayer, psalm-singing, and a warm exhortation. Soon after this, I read prayers, and preached at Newgate to a large and very attentive congregation. At ten, I preached at St Werburgh's with great freedom, and to a large audience. Blessed be God, I thought yesterday I should not have the use of any pulpit; but God, who has the hearts of all men in his hands, disposed the reverend Mr Penrose to lend me his, who thanked me for my sermon; and the reverend Mr Gibbs sent to me, and offered me the use both of St Thomas's and St Mary's Ratcliff. The latter of these I accepted of, and preached to such a congregation as my eyes never yet saw, with great liberty and demonstration of the spirit. Many went away for want of room; and Mr Gibbs and his lady were exceeding civil both to me and Mr Seward. The Lord reward them for this their love.

After sermon, and taking a little refreshment, I hasted to a society in Baldwin-street, where many hundreds were assembled to hear me, so that the stairs and court below, besides the room itself, were crowded. Here I continued expounding for near two hours. And then expounded for as long a time at another society in Nicholas-street, equally thronged, but with much greater power. Surely, that same Jesus that came to his disciples, the doors being shut, when they assembled together, was with us of a truth: for great numbers were quite melted down, and God so caused me to renew my strength, that I was better when I returned home, than when I began to exhort my young fellow-soldiers at six in the morning. I could not do this, except Jesus Christ did strengthen me. By his free grace alone, I am what I am. Not unto me, but unto thy name, O Lord, alone be all the glory.

Monday, February 19. Read prayers and expounded as usual at Newgate, and preached in the afternoon to a great multitude at the parish church of St Philip and

Jacob, and collected eighteen pounds for the orphan-house. Thousands went away, because there was no room for them within; and God enabled me to read prayers and preach with great boldness. See ye not, ye opposers, how you prevail nothing? Why do you not believe, that it would not be thus, unless God was with me? Lord, open thou their eyes that they may see that this is thy doing.

About six in the evening I went to a new society greatly thronged, and was enabled, notwithstanding I had exerted myself so much at St Philip's, to expound with great freedom of spirit for above an hour. Thence I went and expounded for near the space of two hours to another society in Baldwin-street, and much power from above was amongst us. This done, I returned home full of joy, which was kept up by conversing, singing, and praying with many christian brethren. We parted, rejoicing that God caused us to go on from conquering, and to conquer.

Amongst the letters I received from religious correspondents, one writes to me thus,—“Mr ——, who wrote that letter in the ‘Miscellany,’ died yesterday.” He is now gone to give an account of the many hard speeches contained therein; and is convinced that orthodoxy in notions is not the whole of religion. In another part of his letter he writes thus,—“We had such a remarkable and sensible presence of God with us at Beech-lane this evening, as my eyes and ears were never such witnesses of before. In the midst of Mr John Wesley’s exposition, a woman present had such convictions of her lost estate by nature, and such a sense of sin, that she could not forbear crying out aloud; upon which, Mr Wesley, breaking off, went to her, who earnestly desired him to pray for her, which he did in the presence of two or three hundred people, hardly one of whom, I think, could forbear tears, upon which she had comfort.” Blessed be God, the more we are despised, the more he shows that we are teachers sent by him, for no one could do these things, except God was with him.

Tuesday, February 20. This day my master honoured me more than ever he did yet. About ten in the morning, in compliance with a summons received from the apparator yesterday, I waited upon the rev. Mr R——l, the chancellor of Bristol, who now plainly told me he intended to stop my proceedings. "I have sent for the Register here, sir," says he, "to take down your answer." Upon which he asked me by what authority I preached in the diocese of Bristol, without a license. I answered I thought that custom was grown obsolete. "And why, pray sir," replied I, "did not you ask the Irish clergyman this question, who preached for you last Thursday?" He said that was nothing to me. He then read over part of the ordination-office, and those canons that forbid any minister preaching in a private house, &c.; and then he asked me what I said to them? I answered, that I apprehended those canons did not belong to professed ministers of the church of England; but he said they did. "There is also a canon," said I, "sir, forbidding all clergymen to frequent taverns and play at cards; why is not that put in execution?" "Why does not somebody complain of them," says he, "and then it would." When I asked him why I was thus taken particular notice of, referring to my printed discourses for my principles, he said I preached false doctrine, upon which, I answered him not a word, but told him, notwithstanding those canons, I could not but speak the things that I knew, and was resolved to proceed as usual. "Observe his answer then," said he, "Mr Register;" and turning to me, added, "I am resolved, sir, if you preach or expound any where in this diocese, till you have a license, I will first suspend, and then excommunicate you." I then took my leave. He waited upon me very civilly to the door, and told me, "what he did was in the name of the clergy and laity of the city of Bristol;"—and so we parted.

Being taken ill, just before I went to the chancellor, in my return home, I found I had not so much joy as peace. But, however, I did not perceive the least motion of resentment to arise in my heart. And to show

how little I regarded such threatenings, after I had joined in prayer for the chancellor, I immediately went and expounded at Newgate as usual, where God gave me great joy, and wondrously pricked many to the heart, as though he would say,—this is the way, walk in it. After this we dined with several christian friends with the kind keeper of the prison, and rejoiced exceedingly at the thoughts that we should one day or other sing together in such a place as Paul and Silas did. God prepare us for that hour, for I believe it will come. I shall be exalted, I must be humbled.

At four, there was a general expectation of my preaching at St Nicholas's: thousands went to hear me; but the lecturer sent word that orders were given by Mr B——r, that I should not preach in his church, which rejoiced me greatly. Lord, why dost thou thus honour me?

At five I went and expounded on the first of St James, to a christian assembly indeed, who were much affected; and afterwards I hasted to Nicholas-street, where was a great crowd waiting for me upon the stairs, yard, and entry of the house, as well as in the room itself. I expounded the ninth of St John, exhorted all to imitate the poor beggar, and not to fear the face of men. God was pleased to fill me with unspeakable joy and power. All were wondrously touched, and when after my exposition I prayed particularly for the chancellor, the whole company was drowned in tears, and said most earnest Amens to all the petitions I put up for him. It is remarkable, we have not had such a continued presence of God amongst us, as we have had since I was threatened to be excommunicated; but thus it was formerly, so it will be now. When we are cast out, Christ will more clearly reveal himself to us.

Wednesday, February 21. Had several come to me this morning, to inquire about the state of their souls, amongst whom was a little girl of thirteen years of age, who told me in great simplicity, "she was pricked through and through with the power of the word;" and, indeed, a good work, I believe, has been wrought in

her heart. Out of the mouths of babes and sucklings hast thou perfected praise.

Preached at Newgate with uncommon freedom and power, and observed the audience to be quite melted down. After this I made a collection for the poor prisoners, and at my return home was much comforted by another gracious soul, whom God brought unto me, and who was willing to follow me not only to Georgia, but also to prison and to death.

At three in the afternoon, according to my appointment, I went to Kingswood amongst the colliers. God highly favoured us in sending a fine day, and near two thousand people were assembled on that occasion. I preached on John, ch. iii. ver. 3, and enlarged for near an hour, I hope to the comfort and edification of those that heard me. God grant the seed sown, may not fall on stony or thorny, but on good ground.

About six in the evening I expounded to a society without Lawford's-gate, and afterwards to another in Baldwin-street; both were exceedingly crowded and attentive. At first I could not speak so strongly, because I had exerted myself so much upon the mount; but afterwards God gave me a fresh supply of grace, and I was enabled to go through my work cheerfully. Lo! I am with you always, even unto the end of the world.

BATH.

Thursday, February 22. Observing Providence called me, this morning I went, with some christian friends, to Bath; where I was much comforted by meeting with several that love our Lord Jesus in sincerity. More especially, I was edified by the pious conversation of the reverend Mr Griffith Jones, whom I have desired to see of a long season. His words came with power, and the account he gave me of the many obstructions he had met with in his ministry, convinced me that I was but a young soldier, just entering the field. Good God, prepare me manfully to fight whatsoever battles thou hast appointed for me. I can do all things through thee strengthening me.

BRISTOL.

Friday, February 23. Returned hither about ten this morning. About eleven, went as usual, and preached a written sermon at Newgate, and collected two pounds five shillings for the prisoners. Many, I believe, were much affected. To God be all the glory.

After dinner, I was taken very ill, so that I was obliged to lie upon the bed: but, looking upon it only as a thorn in the flesh, at three I went, according to appointment, and preached to near four or five thousand people, from a mount in Kingswood, with great power. The sun shone very bright, and the people standing in such an awful manner round the mount, in the profoundest silence, filled me with a holy admiration. Blessed be God for such a plentiful harvest. Lord, do thou send forth more labourers into thy harvest.

This done, God strengthened me to expound to a society without Lawford's gate, and afterwards to another in the city, and afterwards to a third. And I spoke with more freedom the last time than at the first. When I am weak, then am I strong.

Saturday, February 24. About ten in the morning I waited on the chancellor, and showed a letter I had received from the lord bishop of Bristol. My Master gave me great boldness of speech, and I asked the chancellor why he did not write to the bishop according to his promise? And, I think, he answered, he was to blame. I then insisted on his proving I had preached false doctrine, and reminded him of his threatening to excommunicate me in the name of the clergy and laity of the city of Bristol. But he would have me think that he had said no such thing; and confessed, at this time, that he had neither heard me preach, nor read any of my writings. I asked him his reasons for prohibiting my collecting for the orphan-house. He answered, it would hinder the people's benefactions to the Bristol clergy. I replied, "It would by no means hinder their contribution, and that the clergy ought first to subscribe themselves for example's sake."

After much conversation on this subject, I, with all meekness, told him I was resolved to go on preaching, and that if collections were not made here for the poor Georgians, I would lay it entirely upon him; adding withal, I would not be one that should hinder such a design for the universe.

After I left the chancellor, I went and preached at Newgate; and at three in the afternoon, went to a poor-house without Lawford's gate; but the room and yard being full, I stood upon the steps going up to the house, and preached to them from thence. Many that were passing along the road on horseback, stood still to hear me; and, I hope, many were bettered by what was spoken.

This evening I declined going to any society, that I might have a little time to write letters; amongst which, I wrote the following one to the bishop of Bristol.

“ My Lord, Bristol, February 14, 1738.

“ I humbly thank your lordship for the favour of your lordship's letter. It gave abundant satisfaction to me, and many others, who have not failed to pray in a particular manner for your lordship's temporal and eternal welfare. To-day I showed your lordship's letter to the chancellor, who, notwithstanding he promised not to prohibit my preaching for the orphan-house, if your lordship was only neuter in the affair, has influenced most of the clergy to deny me their pulpits, either on that or any other occasion. Last week he was pleased to charge me with false doctrine. To-day he has forgot that he said so. He also threatened to excommunicate me for preaching in your lordship's diocese. I offered to take a license, but was denied. If your lordship should ask, what evil I have done? I answer, none, save that I visit the religious societies, preach to the prisoners in Newgate, and to the poor colliers in Kingswood, who, they tell me, are little better than heathens. I am charged with being a dissenter; though many are brought to the church by my preaching, not one taken from it. Indeed the

chancellor is pleased to tell me my conduct is contrary to the canons ; but I told him, those canons which he produced are not intended against such meetings as mine are, where his majesty is constantly prayed for, and every one is free to see what is done. I am sorry to give your lordship this trouble ; but I thought proper to mention these particulars, that I might know of your lordship wherein my conduct is exceptionable. I heartily thank your lordship for your intended benefaction. I think the design is truly good, and will meet with success, because so much opposed. God knows my heart, I desire only to promote his glory. If I am spoken evil of for his sake, I rejoice in it. My Master was long since spoken evil of before me. But I intrude on your lordship's patience. I am, with all possible thanks,

My lord,

Your lordship's dutiful son and servant,

G. W.

Sunday, February 25. What mercies has my good God shown me this day ! When I arose in the morning, I thought I should be able to do nothing ; but the divine strength was greatly magnified in my weakness. About six in the morning I prayed, sung with, and exhorted my young morning visitors, as I did last Lord's day. At eight I read prayers, and preached to a very thronged congregation at Newgate, and from thence I rode to Bussleton, a village about two miles from Bristol, where was such a vast congregation, that after I had read prayers in the church, I thought proper to go and preach in the churchyard, that none might be sent empty away. The people were exceedingly attentive, and God gave me great utterance ; and what was best of all, by the leave of the minister, who invited me thither, we had a sacrament ; and, I hope, it was a communion of saints indeed. All things, I find, happen to the furtherance of the gospel ; why then should I fear what man can do unto me ?

At four I hasted to Kingswood. At a moderate computation, there were above ten thousand people to

hear me. The trees and hedges were full. All was hush when I began; the sun shone bright, and God enabled me to preach for an hour with great power, and so loud, that all, I was told, could hear me. Blessed be God, Mr B—n spoke right. The fire is kindled in the country; and, I know, all the devils in Hell shall not be able to quench it.

Finding myself strengthened from above, I went and expounded at Baldwin-street society, when above five pounds were collected for the orphan-house. Afterwards I went to another; and about nine at night came home, rejoicing at the great things God had done for my soul. This day I have been exalted; I must expect now to be humbled. Any thing is welcome to me that God sends.

Monday, February 26. This morning I wrote the following letter to the chancellor.

“Reverend Sir,

“The enclosed is a letter I sent on Saturday to the bishop of Bristol; be pleased to peruse it, and see if any thing contrary to truth is there related by,

“Reverend Sir,

“Your very humble servant,

“Bristol, February 28, 1738.”

“G. W.”

Preached at Newgate,—was refreshed by the conversation of some whom God had wrought upon by my ministry—answered my religious friends’ letters, and expounded twice in the evening to two large societies. Blessed be God, I find myself much refreshed in spirit, and a new supply of strength given me. Thus shall it be done to the man whom God delighteth to honour. Oh, free grace in Christ Jesus!

Tuesday, February 27. Expounded at Newgate with more power than ever—had success in my collections for the orphan-house, and expounded twice, as usual, and was greatly strengthened with might in the inner man. This is to prepare me for some fresh opposition. I wonder I meet with so little. But God will lay upon me no more than I am able to bear. For ever adored be his unmerited love, through Christ.

Wednesday, February 28. Preached at Newgate, and expounded to the societies, as usual; and intended to go and preach upon the mount in Kingswood; but was dissuaded from it, by a report that the waters were out. However, many, as I was told afterwards, came from far to hear me; so that it repented me that I went not. When people are willing to hear, it is a pity that any minister should be slow to preach.

Thursday, March 1. Amongst my other letters by this day's post, I received the following one from the reverend Mr John Wesley.

“My dear brother, February 20.

“Our Lord's hand is not shortened amongst us. Yesterday I preached at St Catherine's, and at Islington, where the church was almost as hot as some of the society rooms used to be. I think I never was so much strengthened before. The fields, after service, were white with people praising God.—About three hundred were present at Mr S—'s; thence I went to Mr B—'s, then to Fetter-lane, and at nine to Mr B—'s; where also we only wanted room.—To-day I expound in the Minories at four, at Mrs W—'s at six, and to a large company of poor sinners in Gravel-lane (Bishopgate) at eight. The society at Mr Crouch's does not meet till eight; so that I expound before I go to him near St James's square; where one young woman has been lately filled with the Holy Ghost, and overflows with joy and love. On Wednesday, at six, we have a noble company of women, not adorned with gold or costly apparel, but with a meek and quiet spirit, and good works. At the Savoy, on Thursday evening, we have usually two or three hundred, most of them, at least, thoroughly awakened. Mr A—'s parlour is more than filled on Friday, as is Mr P—'s room twice over, where, I think, I have commonly had more power given me than at any other place. A week or two ago a note was given me there, as near as I can remember in these words, ‘Your prayers are desired for a sick child that is a lunatic, and sore vexed day and night, that our Lord would heal him, as he did those

in the days of his flesh ; and that he would give his parents faith and patience till his time is come.'

"On Saturday sennight, a middle-aged, well-dressed woman at Beech-lane (where I expound usually to five or six hundred before I go to Mr E—'s society) was seized, as it appeared to several about her, with little less than the agonies of death. We prayed that God, who had brought her to the birth, would give her strength to bring forth, and that he would work speedily, that all might see it, and fear, and put their trust in the Lord. Five days she travailed and groaned, being in bondage. On Thursday evening our Lord got himself the victory ; and, from that moment, she has been full of love and joy, which she openly declared at the same on Saturday last ; so that thanksgivings also were given to God by many on her account. It is to be observed, her friends have accounted her mad for these three years ; and accordingly bled, blistered her, and what not. Come and let us praise the Lord, and magnify his name together."

The following paragraph was likewise in a letter I received from my dear brother Kinchin of Oxon.

"God has greatly blessed us at Oxford of late. We have reason to think, that four within this fortnight have been born of God. The people crowd to the societies on Sunday nights, several gownsmen among the rest. God has much assisted me. Last night we had a thronged society, and about forty gownsmen."

Blessed be God, I hope the kingdom of Jesus Christ will now come with power, and that a remnant of despised Methodists will still be left at Oxford, which shall take root downwards, and bear fruit upwards.

The weather being fair, after I had preached, and collected thirty-seven shillings at Newgate, I went on the mount at Kingswood ; where, about fifteen hundred colliers and country people were gathered together, and were very attentive to hear me. Blessed be God, I preached with power, and have reason to believe, by what I have heard, that my words have not

altogether fallen to the ground. Some of the colliers, I find, have been much affected. Blessed be God.

BATH.

Friday, March 2. Went to Bath this morning to see the reverend Mr T—n, who came from Cornwall to see me. In the afternoon, I read prayers at the hospital; the lessons were exceeding applicable, and gave us comfort. I spent the evening in taking sweet counsel with some pious honourable women, Mr Griffith Jones, and other good soldiers of Jesus Christ. Blessed be God, there are yet some left who are true followers of the Lamb.

BRISTOL.

Saturday, March 3. Returned before ten to Bristol, was greatly refreshed by a packet of letters from London. Expounded with great power at Newgate, and preached in the afternoon on the steps before the poor-house without Lawford's gate, and perceived my audience much increased since last Saturday. Blessed be God, many went affected away.

Sunday, March 4. Rose much refreshed in spirit, and gave my early attendants a warm exhortation as usual. Went to Newgate, and preached with great power, to an exceedingly thronged congregation. Then hastened to Hannam mount, three miles from the city, where the colliers live altogether. God highly favoured us in the weather. Above four thousand were ready to hear me; and God enabled me to preach with the demonstration of the Spirit. The ground not being high enough, I stood upon a table, and the sight of the people covering the green fields, and their deep attention pleased me much. I hope that same Lord, who fed so many thousands with bodily bread, will feed all their souls with that bread which cometh down from heaven: for many come from far.

At four in the afternoon, I went to the mount on Rose-green, and preached to above fourteen thousand souls; and so good was my God, that all could hear. I think it was worth while to come many miles to see

such a sight. I spoke, blessed be God, with great freedom; but thought all the while, as I do continually when I ascend the mount, that hereafter I shall suffer as well as speak for my Master's sake. Lord, strengthen me against that hour. Lord, I believe, O help my unbelief! that thy grace will be more than sufficient for me.

In the evening I expounded at Baldwin-street society, but could not get up to the room without the utmost difficulty, the entry and court were so much thronged. Blessed be God, the number of hearers much increases; and as my day is, so is my strength. To-night I returned home much more refreshed in my spirits than in the morning when I went out. I was full of joy, and longed to be dissolved, and to be with Jesus Christ; but I have a baptism first to be baptized with. Father, thy will be done. This has been a sabbath indeed to my soul!

Monday, March 5. Had the pleasure of having many, whom God has touched by my ministry, come to me, inquiring about the new birth. At eleven, I preached with uncommon freedom and power at Newgate, and collected thirty-nine shillings for the poor prisoners; and being invited by many colliers, at three in the afternoon I went to a place called the Fishponds, on another side of Kingswood, where about two thousand were gathered together. The sight pleased me much; and having no better place to stand upon, the wall was my pulpit, and, I think, I never spoke with greater power. My preaching in the fields may displease some timorous bigoted men; but I am thoroughly persuaded it pleases God; and why should I fear any thing else?

At my return home, I was much refreshed with the sight of two pious friends. After some conversation, they went with me to a society, where I prayed and expounded for above an hour, and then spent the remainder of the evening with them and many other christian brethren, in warming one another's hearts by mutual exhortation, and singing of psalms. Oh, that sensualists knew the pleasure of a religious conversa-

tion ! I am sure they would no longer eat husks with swine, but return home to feed on the fatted calf.

NEW PASSAGE.

Tuesday, March 9. Having left my dear brother Hutchins, whom I sent to for that purpose to supply my place during my absence ; after many kind salutations, psalms, and prayers on both sides, Mr Seward, myself, and another brother, took leave of our Bristol friends, and got to the New Passage in a short time. Here we staid and refreshed ourselves, and endeavoured to go off in the boat about noon ; but the wind not permitting us, we took this opportunity of writing to many of our christian friends, and exhorting them to lay hold on Jesus Christ by faith.

At the inn where we put up there was an unhappy clergyman, who, so far had his corruptions dominion over him, would not go over in the passage boat because I went in it. Alas ! thought I, this very temper would make heaven itself unpleasant to that man, if he saw me there. I was likewise told, that in the public kitchen, he charged me with being a dissenter ; when a little after, as I passed by, I saw him shaking his elbows over a gaming table. I heartily wish those who charge me causelessly with schism, and being righteous overmuch, would consider that the canon of our church forbids our clergy to frequent taverns, to play at cards or dice, or any other unlawful games. Their indulging themselves in these things, is a stumbling block to thousands.

After supper, in the evening, I called the family of the inn together, and was pleased to see near twenty come to hear the word. God enabled me to speak and pray with power, and having dispersed some extracts from our church homilies amongst them, I and my friends went early to bed, being apprized that we were to be called up betimes. Blessed be God, for any opportunity of doing good.

CARDIFF.

Wednesday, March 8. Arose before twelve at night, sung psalms, and prayed ; and the wind being fair, we

had a speedy passage over to the Welsh shore. Our business being in haste, God having, of his good providence, sent one to guide us, we rode all night, stopped at Newport to refresh ourselves, where we met with two friends, and reached Cardiff about eleven in the morning.

The town, I soon found, was apprehensive of my coming; and therefore, whilst I was giving a word of exhortation to some poor people at the inn, who hanged upon me to hear the word, Mr Seward went to ask for the pulpit: but being denied, we pitched on the town-hall, which Mr Seward got by his interest; and at four in the afternoon, I preached from the judge's seat to about four hundred hearers. Most were very attentive; but some mocked; however, I offered Jesus Christ freely even to them, and should have rejoiced if they would have accepted of him; but their foolish hearts were hardened. Lord, make them monuments of thy free grace.

After I came from the seat, I was much refreshed with the sight of my dear brother Howel Harris; whom, though I knew not in person, I have long since loved in the bowels of Jesus Christ, and have often felt my soul drawn out in prayer in his behalf.

“A burning and shining light has he been in those parts; a barrier against profaneness and immorality, and an indefatigable promoter of the true gospel of Jesus Christ. About three or four years God has inclined him to go about doing good. He is now above twenty-five years of age. Twice he has applied, being every way qualified, for holy orders; but he was refused, under a false pretence, that he was not of age, though he was then twenty-two years and six months. About a month ago he offered himself again, but was put off. Upon this, he was, and is still resolved to go on in his work; and indefatigable zeal has he shown in his Master's service. For these three years, as he told me from his own mouth, he has discoursed almost twice every day for three or four hours together; not

authoritatively, as a minister, but as a private person, exhorting his christian brethren. He has been, I think, in seven counties, and has made it his business to go to wakes, &c. to turn people from such lying vanities. Many alehouse people, fiddlers, harpers, &c. Demetrius like, sadly cry out against him for spoiling their business. He has been made the subject of numbers of sermons, has been threatened with public prosecutions, and had constables sent to apprehend him. But God has blessed him with inflexible courage. Instantaneous strength has been communicated to him from above; and he still continues to go on from conquering to conquer. He is of a most catholic spirit, loves all that love our Lord Jesus Christ, and therefore, he is styled by bigots, a dissenter. He is contemned by all that are lovers of pleasure more than lovers of God; but God has greatly blessed his pious endeavours. Many call and own him as their spiritual father, and I believe would lay down their lives for his sake. He discourses generally in a field; but at other times in a house, from a wall, a table, or any thing else. He has established near thirty societies in South Wales, and still his sphere of action is enlarged daily. He is full of faith, and the Holy Ghost."

When I first saw him, my heart was knit closely to him. I wanted to catch some of his fire, and gave him the right hand of fellowship with my whole heart. After I had saluted him, and given a warm exhortation to a great number of people who followed me to the inn, we spent the remainder of the evening in taking sweet counsel together, and telling one another what God had done for our souls. My heart was still drawn out towards him more and more. A divine and strong sympathy seemed to be between us, and I was resolved to promote his interest with all my might. Accordingly we took an account of the several societies, and agreed on such measures as seemed most conducive to promote the common interest of our Lord. Blessed be God, there seems to be a noble spirit gone out into

Wales ; and I believe, ere long, there will be more visible fruits of it. What inclines me strongly to think so is, that the partition wall of bigotry and party zeal is broken down, and ministers and teachers of different communions, join with one heart and one mind to carry on the kingdom of Jesus Christ. The Lord make all the christian world thus minded. For till this is done, I fear, we must despair of any great reformation in the church of God. After much comfortable and encouraging discourse with each other, we kneeled down and prayed, and great enlargement of heart God was pleased to give me in that duty.

This done, we eat a little supper, and then, after singing a hymn, we went to bed, praising and blessing God for bringing us face to face. I doubt not but Satan envied our happiness. But, I hope, by the help of God we shall make his kingdom shake. God loves to do great things by weak instruments, that the power may be of God, and not of man.

Thursday, March 9. Was much refreshed by last night's rest, and spent the beginning of the morning in prayer and private discourse with the members of the religious society. About ten, according to appointment, I went to the town-hall, and preached for about an hour and a half to a large assembly of people. My dear brother Howel Harris sat close by me. I did not observe any scoffers within ; but without, some were pleased to honour me so far, as to trail a dead fox, and hunt it about the hall. But, blessed be God, my voice prevailed. God gave me great strength, and I could have heartily wished all such scoffers had been present, that I might have offered them salvation through Jesus Christ. This being done, I went, with many of my hearers, amongst whom were two worthy dissenting ministers, and my brother Howel Harris, to public worship ; and in the second lesson were these remarkable words, " And the high priests, and the scribes, and the chief of the people sought to destroy him ; but they could not find what they might do to him : for all the people were attentive to hear him "

In the afternoon, about four of the clock, I preached again to the people without any scoffing or disturbance. And at six in the evening, I talked for above an hour and a half, and prayed with the religious society, whose room was quite thronged. Indeed God was with us of a truth. I think I never spoke with greater freedom and power, and never saw a congregation more melted down. The love of Jesus Christ touched them to the quick; most of them were dissolved into tears, and seemed to have their hearts perfectly knit towards me. Afterwards, they came to me weeping, bidding me farewell, and wishing I was to continue with them longer. Indeed their love and undissembled simplicity affected me much. My bowels yearned towards them; I wrestled with God in prayer for them, and blessed his holy name for sending me into Wales. I hope these are the first fruits of a greater harvest, if ever it should please God to bring me back from Georgia. Father, thy will be done.

NEWPORT IN WALES.

Friday, March 9. Left Cardiff about six in the morning, and reached Newport about ten, where many came from Pontypool, and other parts, on purpose to hear me. The minister being asked, and readily granting us the pulpit, I preached with great power to about a thousand people; and then, with my brother Howel Harris, Seward, &c. we went rejoicing, and blessing God for opening an effectual door by the way. I think Wales is excellently well prepared for the gospel of Christ. They have many burning and shining lights both among the dissenting and church ministers, amongst whom Mr Griffith Jones shines in particular. No less than fifty charity schools have been erected by his means, without any settled visible fund, and fresh ones are setting up every day. People make nothing of coming twenty miles to hear a sermon, and great numbers there are who have not only been hearers, but doers also of the word; so that there is a most comfortable prospect of the spreading of the gospel in Wales. I really believe there are some now living,

which shall not taste of death till they see the kingdom of God come with power.

BRISTOL.

Saturday, March 10. Got safe to Bristol with my dear fellow travellers about eleven at night. Preached in the morning at Newgate, and in the afternoon on the poor-house steps. The hearers were much affected, and melted into tears.

Sunday, March 11. Had a whole room full of people come to hear me at six in the morning, with whom I prayed and sung psalms for near an hour. Then I read prayers, and preached at Newgate. Afterwards went to Hannam mount, where was near a third part as many again as last Sunday; and at four in the afternoon, preached as usual, on the mount at Rose-green. The congregation was not quite so large as before, on account of the coldness of the weather; but God was pleased to withhold the rain and hail whilst I was speaking, and we collected ten pounds for the orphan-house. Blessed be God, my strength increases. Satan has been very quiet this week past, and God has poured much comfort into my soul; so that I must prepare for fresh trials. O my dear Redeemer, grant that I may put on the whole armour of God, that I may withstand all the fiery darts of the devil.

BATH.

Monday, March 12. Went, in company with seven more dear friends, to Bath, and had the comfort of meeting with some true followers of Jesus Christ, whom I knew not before. Received news of the wonderful progress of the gospel in Yorkshire, under the ministry of my dear brother Ingham. Had the pleasure of hearing that the mayor and the sheriffs of Bristol had absolutely forbid the keeper of Newgate letting me preach there any longer, because I insisted upon the necessity of our new birth. The keeper was much concerned, and told them, I preached agreeable to scripture; but they were offended at him. "They answered and said unto him, thou art altogether born in sin, and dost thou teach us?" John ix. 34.

Finding many in Bath were desirous to hear me, having given a short notice, about five in the evening I preached out on the town common, to a much larger audience than could reasonably be expected. It snowed good part of the time; but the people staid very contentedly. Indeed some said, as I heard afterwards, that I spoke blasphemy; but the people of God were much rejoiced; and some, I hope, effectually wrought upon. Praised be God for opening such an effectual door here. Many adversaries must be expected in so polite a place as Bath. But God is with me, and I fear neither men nor devils.

After sermon, I returned to our inn, and spent the remainder of the evening in sweet conversation with a great number of experienced christians. My heart was much enlarged in prayer; and I can say, the love of God was shed abroad abundantly therein. For ever adored be the riches of his free mercy.

Tuesday, March 13. Preached again at the Fishponds with great power, and observed all to behave exceeding orderly.

Had extraordinary power given me at the society in Nicholas-street, and exhorted them with all possible earnestness, not to let bigotry, or party zeal, be so much as mentioned among them. For I despair of seeing Christ's kingdom come, till we are all thus minded.

Wednesday, March 14. Being forbid preaching in the prison, and, withal, being resolved not to give place to my adversaries, no not for an hour, I preached at Baptist Mills, a place very near the city, to three or four thousand people, from these words, "What think you of Christ?" Blessed be God, all things happen for the furtherance of the gospel. I now preach to ten times more people than I should, if I had been confined to the churches. Surely the devil is blind, and so are his emissaries, or otherwise they would not thus confound themselves. Every day I am invited to fresh places. I will, by the divine assistance, go to as many as I can; the rest I must leave unvisited, till it shall please God to bring me back from Georgia.

Thursday, March 15. It snowing all day, I could not go to Sison to preach, as I proposed, but spent the day in religious discourse, writing letters, and expounding; in which God was pleased to give me unspeakable comfort. Received a strong invitation to come to Cardiff once more, and to preach at Landaff; but business will not permit. Blessed be God, that people are ready to hear his word. Surely the Lord will fulfil the desires of them that fear him.

Friday, March 16. Being much entreated by the people, and horses being sent for me, I went and preached at Elberton, a village about nine miles off Bristol. The clergyman denied me the pulpit; so I preached on a little ascent on which the maypole was fixed. The weather being cold, and the adjacent villages having but little notice, I had not above two hundred hearers. But after dinner, I hasted to Thornbury, where I was invited also, and preached with uncommon power to a great part of my morning congregation, and many hundreds besides. Mr Willis, the incumbent, lent me the church, and used me with great civility, as did two other clergymen who were there present. The people were very desirous to have me stay; but I had promised to lie at Wintenburn, at a quaker's house, where three more of their friends met us, and with whom we had agreeable conversation. But I cannot say their arguments for omitting the outward signs of baptism, and the Lord's supper, and for having no outward call to the ministry, were at all convincing: however, they wished me good luck in the name of the Lord, and we parted from each other very lovingly. God grant I may be always of a catholic spirit.

BRISTOL.

Saturday, March 17. Returned to Bristol about eight in the morning, and had the pleasure of hearing that Mr Mayor, &c. had engaged a clergyman to preach to the poor prisoners at Newgate, rather than to agree to a petition they had presented to have me. "Some preach Christ out of contention, supposing to add

affliction to my bonds, and others of good will : however, Christ is preached, and I therein rejoice, yea, and will rejoice."

Had the honour of seeing another letter, intended against me, put in print ; and God rewarded me for it, by giving me such extraordinary power at the poor-house this afternoon, that great numbers were quite melted, and dissolved into tears. The enemies of God's church undesignedly do God's work. I never am so much assisted, as when persons endeavour to blacken me ; and I find the number of my hearers so increase by opposition, as well as my own inward peace, and love, and joy, that I only fear a calm. But the enmity that is in the heart of every natural man against God, will not suffer them to be quiet long. I only say, I would send my adversaries to school to Gamaliel. "If this work be not of God," says he, "it will come to naught ; but if it be, ye cannot overthrow it ; lest haply ye be found to fight against God."

Sunday, March 18. Had the pleasure of seeing my morning audience so much increased, that above a hundred were obliged to stand without in the street. Was taken ill for about two hours ; but notwithstanding, was enabled to go and preach at Hannam to many more than were there last Sunday. And in the afternoon, I really believe no less than twenty thousand were present at Rose-green. Blessed are the eyes which see the things which we see. Surely God is with us of a truth. To behold such crowds stand about us in such an awful silence, and to hear the echo of their singing run from one end of them to the other, is very solemn and surprising. My discourse continued for near an hour and a half ; and at both places, above fourteen pounds were collected for the orphan-house ; and it pleased me to see with what cheerfulness the colliers and poor people threw in their mites. Contrary to my expectation, having a cold upon me, God enabled me afterwards to expound for above an hour to a crowded society, with great freedom and plainness of speech ; and I came home full of peace and joy in

the Holy Ghost. What a mystery is the divine life! Oh, that all were partakers of it!

BATH.

Monday, March 19. After having refreshed myself and friends by reading a packet of letters from London, and despatched some other business, according to appointment, I set out for Bath, and got thither about three in the afternoon. Dinner being ended, through great weakness of body, and sickness in my stomach, I was obliged to lie down upon the bed; but the hour being come for my preaching, I went, weak and languid as I was, depending on the divine strength, and, I think, scarce ever preached with greater power. There were about four or five thousand of high and low, rich and poor, to hear. As I went along, I observed many scoffers; and when I got upon the table to preach, many laughed; but before I had finished my prayer, all was hush and silent; and ere I had concluded my discourse, God, by his word, seemed to impress a great awe upon their minds; for all were deeply attentive, and seemed much affected with what had been spoken. Men may scoff for a little while; but there is something in this foolishness of preaching which will make the most stubborn heart to bend or break. "Is not my word like fire, saith the Lord, and like a hammer that breaketh the rock in pieces?"

Tuesday, March 20. Had the pleasure of hearing of the success of my discourse yesterday upon many souls, especially upon two little children, who were observed to come home crying, and to retire to prayers. Spent the morning in writing letters, and visiting some few righteous souls that live in this Sodom. God has a remnant every where. At eleven o'clock I read prayers at the hospital, and was greatly comforted by the second lesson, which was the 7th of St John. After dinner I was taken ill again; but notwithstanding, God strengthened me to preach to about as great a congregation as yesterday, and, I believe, with great success; for some wept, and all seemed much affected, and were very silent. The remainder of the evening

I spent with many gracious souls, who came to my lodgings, with whom I took sweet counsel, and went to bed full of comfort and unspeakable joy. Blessed be God, I can say, the life which I now live in the flesh, I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me.

Wednesday, March 21. Breakfasted this morning with one Mr M——r, who kindly invited me and my friends.—Perceived a great freedom in my spirit, and afterwards went to a private house, where many were assembled to hear the word. But God only can tell how their hearts were melted down. Oh! how did the poor souls weep over me! how did they pray that I would come amongst them again! surely, I might have said with St Paul, on another occasion, what mean you to weep, and to break my heart? But I could do no more than pray that God would send them some faithful labourer. Having dispersed among them some of my sermons on the marks of the new birth, I at length took my leave, and retired to my lodgings. Every time I look upon the bath, I think on the pool of Bethesda. O blessed Jesu, look down with compassion on it; and as thou hast cured many impotent persons by these healing waters, heal, I beseech thee, the diseases of their sin-sick souls by the power of thy all-quickenings strengthening grace. Even so, Lord Jesus! Amen.

KEINSHAM.

Dined with one Mr M——, an eminent quaker in Bath, who entertained me and my friends in a most christian manner. About three we left Bath, and though it was a wet day, were agreeably surprised by meeting great numbers of horsemen, &c. from Bristol, besides several thousands from the neighbouring villages, who came to hear me, according to appointment. The church being refused, I preached on a mount. Our master being with us, I preached with power. We came on our way rejoicing, and reached Bristol about seven at night, and went immediately and expounded the 7th of St John to Baldwin-street society,

where we also gave thanks for the great things we had seen and heard since we met together last.

Thursday, March 22. Received unspeakable pleasure from a letter of this day's post, which brought me word of the flourishing of the gospel at Oxford. Had many gracious souls came to me to consult me in spiritual cases, and could not but rejoice to see how secretly and irresistibly the kingdom of Jesus Christ is carried on, in spite of all opposition. In the afternoon I preached again at Baptist Mills, where somebody was so kind as to put some turf together for me to stand upon. I perceived a great freedom of speech, and insisted much on original sin, because there are many in this city who, I fear, have imbibed the principles of that polite preacher Mr F—. But woe be to them that deny that they are born in sin. Surely, they must be past feeling. Woe be to them that deny the Lord that brought them, for it saps the very foundation of the christian religion. And as for my own part, did I not firmly believe that Jesus Christ was truly and properly God, I never would preach the gospel again. Whosoever preaches any otherwise, let him be accursed. Had great power amongst us at the society in the evening. The people throng more and more. A good sign that all do not come out of curiosity, but with a desire to know and do their duty.

Friday, March 23. Dined with many quakers at French-hay, who entertained me and my friends with much christian love; but we could by no means agree about the disuse of the two outward signs in the sacrament, nor of their absolute refusing to pay tithes. But I think their notions about walking and being led by the spirit are right and good. I should rejoice to find all quakers thus minded. Much sincerity and simplicity seem to be amongst them. But I think, at the same time, they insist so much upon the inward life, they place too much religion in their not using externals.

After dinner, I went and preached at the Fish-pond,

as usual, where were many coaches, and about as great a number of people as before. God gave me great freedom and power. I was longer than common both in my prayers and sermon. Many, I believe, were affected. After I came home, I visited two societies, where God was pleased to give us great tokens of his presence; and the way up to the last room was so exceedingly thronged, that I was obliged to go up by a ladder through a window.

Saturday, March 24. Received glad tidings of great joy from my religious correspondents. Spent the morning in answering their kind letters, and preached in the afternoon at the poor-house, where both the number of the people and my strength were greatly increased. After sermon, I collected for the orphan-house, and the poor people so loaded my hat with their mites, that I wanted somebody to hold up my hands. The cheerfulness with which they gave is inexpressible; and the many prayers they joined with their alms, I hope will lay a good foundation for the house intended to be built. After this, God brought me to some more of his own dear children, and I spent the remainder of the evening in expounding to a society, where almost all were drowned in tears, when I mentioned my departure to them. The good Lord send somebody amongst them to water what his own right hand hath planted. Even so, come Lord Jesus, come quickly.

Sunday, March 25. God will work, and who shall hinder? I am shut out of the prison, and my sister's room was not large enough to contain a fourth part of the people who come to me on a Sunday morning. But God put it into the hearts of some gentlemen to lend me a large bowling-green, where I preached to about five thousand people, and made a collection for my poor orphans, till my hands were quite weary. Blessed be God, that the bowling-green is turned into a preaching-place. This, I hope, is a token that assembly-rooms and playhouses will soon be put to the same use. O may the word of God be mighty to the pulling down

of these strong holds of the devil ! All that love our Lord Jesus, I am sure, will say, Amen.

Preached at Hannam to a larger congregation than ever, and preached again in the afternoon to upwards (as was computed) of 23,000 people. I was afterwards told, that those who stood farthest off could hear me very plainly. Oh, may God speak to them by his Spirit, at the same time that he enables me to lift up my voice like a trumpet !

About eight I went to the society in Nicholas-street. I, with great difficulty, at last got up into the room, which was extremely hot. God enabled me to speak with much freedom and power ; and at the close of my exhortation, I recommended a charity-school, which was opened by this society to-day. I collected at the door myself, and few passed by without throwing in their mites. Yet a little while, and I hope Bristol will be as famous for charity-schools as London. We must not despise the day of small things. Blessed be God for the strength of this day. The Lord make me humbly thankful.

Monday, March 26. Still God has pleased to give me fresh tokens of his love. Letters are sent me, and people come to me continually, telling me what God hath done for their souls by my unworthy ministry.

At four in the afternoon I preached again at the bowling-green, to, I believe, seven or eight thousand people. The sun shone bright, and the windows and balconies of the adjoining houses were filled with hearers. I was uncommonly enlarged in prayer, and so carried out beyond myself in preaching, especially when I came to talk of the love and free grace of Jesus Christ, that I heartily wished it was in my power that moment to place all my enemies at the right hand of God. The concern the people were in is inexpressible. A hearty groan goes through them all when any thing affecting is spoken ; and I am sure that thousands come not out of curiosity, but a sincere desire of being fed with the milk of the word. After-

wards, I again collected for the orphan-house, and it was near an hour and a half before the people could go out. Many were very faint because of the throng, which was so exceeding great that they trod one upon another.

At eight I hasted to Weavers'-hall in Temple-street, which was procured me, because the society rooms were too little. I was almost faint before I could get in through the crowd; but God enabled me to speak with uncommon freedom, and was with us of a truth. I believe there might be a thousand hearers. Well may the devil and his servants rage horribly. Their kingdom is in danger.

After I had done, I went to a christian house, where many waited for me; and, at my return home, my master paid me my wages; for my soul was filled with an intenseness of love, and I knew what it is, not only to have righteousness and peace, but joy in the Holy Ghost. This is my continual food.

Tuesday, March 27. At four this afternoon, being invited several times, I preached in a yard belonging to the glass-houses, where many dwell; who (as I was informed) neither feared God, nor regarded man. The congregation consisted of many thousands, and God enabled me to lay before them his threatenings and promises; so that none might either despair or presume. Oh that I may be taught of God rightly to divide the word of truth!

Whilst I was preaching, I heard many people behind me hollowing, and making a noise, and supposed they were set on by somebody on purpose to disturb me. I bless God I was not in the least moved, but rather increased the more in strength; but when I had done, and inquired the cause of that noise, I was informed, that a gentleman (being drunk) had taken the liberty to call me dog, and say, "that I ought to be whipped at the cart's tail, and offered money to any that would pelt me." Instead of that, the boys and people near began to cast stones and dirt at him. I knew nothing of it till afterwards, when I expressed

my dislike of their behaviour, but could not help observing, what sorry wages the devil gives his servants

In the evening I expounded again in Weavers'-hall, to a most crowded and attentive assembly. People follow more and more. There is a divine attraction in the word of God. Still draw us, O Lord, and we shall still come after thee.

Wednesday, March 28. Had the pleasure of hearing, that above a hundred people set apart a day for prayer in behalf of me and my dear brother Howel Harris, &c.. While our friends thus continue to hold up their hands, our spiritual Amalek will never prevail against us.

Preached in the afternoon at Publow, a village about five miles from Bristol, to several thousands of people. The church was offered; but being not sufficient to contain a third part of the audience, by the advice of friends I preached in the fields, which put me in mind of our Lord's saying, "Go out into the highways and hedges and compel them to come in."

Was blessed with two excellent letters. Found out some more of God's secret ones, received some temporal mercies, expounded to the society in Baldwin-street, and went to a friend's house, where we eat our bread with gladness and singleness of heart. Oh the comforts of a spiritual life!

Thursday, March 29. Blessed be God, I hope a good work is begun to-day. Having had several notices that the colliers of Kingswood were willing to subscribe, I went to dinner with them near a place called Two Mile Hill, and collected above twenty pounds in money, and got above forty pounds in subscriptions toward building them a charity-school. It was surprising to see with what cheerfulness they parted with their money on this occasion. Were I to continue here, I would endeavour to settle schools all over the wood, as also in other places, as Mr Griffith Jones has done in Wales. But I have but just time to set it on foot. I hope God will bless the ministry of my

honoured friend Mr John Wesley, and enable him to bring it to good effect. It is a pity so many little ones as there are in Kingswood, should perish for lack of knowledge. Stir up thy power, O Lord, and come amongst them, for the sake of Jesus Christ.

After dinner I preached a farewell sermon, and recommended the charity-school to their consideration; and they all seemed willing to assist either by their money or their labour, and to offer such things as they had. I doubt not but the Lord will prosper this work of my hands upon me.

As soon as I came to town, I took my leave of a society in Castle-street; but tongue cannot express the sorrow they were in at the mention of my departure. After this, I did the same at a society in Nicholas-street; and, I believe, for near an hour, they wept aloud and sorely all over the room, as though they were mourning for the death of their first-born. Oh how close are their hearts knit to me! Blessed be God, there is one coming after me, who, I hope, will cherish the spark of divine love now kindled in their hearts, till it grows into a flame. Amen, Lord Jesus.

Friday, March 30. Preached this afternoon near Colepit Heath, seven miles from Bristol, a place to which I was earnestly invited, and where great numbers of colliers live. I believe there were above two thousand people assembled on this occasion. The weather was exceeding fair, the hearers behaved very well, and the place where I preached being near the Maypole, I took occasion to warn them of mispending their time in revelling and dancing. Oh that all such entertainments were put a stop to! I see no other way to effect it, but by going boldly, and calling people from such lying vanities in the name of Jesus Christ. That reformation which is brought about by a coercive power, will be only outward and superficial; but that which is done by the force of God's word, will be inward and lasting. Lord, make me meet by thy grace for such a work, and then send me. Lo! I come to do thy will.

About seven I returned to Bristol, and took leave of the society without Lawford's gate; but there were so many people, that I was obliged to stand and expound at the window, that those in the yard (which was full) might hear also. Their hearts were ready to burst with grief; but I hope my dear Master will come and comfort them.

Saturday, March 31. Went this morning, and visited the poor man who was misused at the glass-houses. He seemed much concerned for what he had done, and confessed he knew not what he did: upon which I took occasion to dissuade him from the sin of drunkenness, and parted from him very friendly.

At eleven I went and gave the prisoners a farewell exhortation, and left orders concerning the distribution of the money that had been collected for them. At four I preached, as usual, at the poor-house, where was a greater congregation than ever, and very near nine pounds gathered for the orphan-house. Blessed be God, the longer I stay the more my hearers increase.

At my return home I was much refreshed with the sight of my honoured friend Mr John Wesley, whom God's providence has sent to Bristol. Lord, now lettest thou thy servant depart in peace.

Sunday, April 1. Preached at the Bowling-green, Hannam, and Rose-green; at all which places the congregations were much enlarged, especially at the latter. There were twenty-four coaches, and an exceeding great number of other people, both on foot and horseback. The wind was not so well set to carry the voice as usual; but, however, I was strengthened to cry aloud, and take my last farewell. As I was returning home, it comforted me exceedingly to hear almost every one blessing me, and wishing me a good voyage in the name of the Lord. And indeed my heart is so knit to Bristol people, that I could not with so much submission leave them, did I not know dear Mr Wesley was left behind to teach them the way of God more perfectly. Prosper, O Lord, the works of his hands upon him.

At seven I went and took my leave of Baldwin-street society; but the yard, and entry leading to it, was so exceedingly crowded, that I was obliged to climb up by a ladder, and go over the tiling of another house near adjoining, before I could get to the door.

Monday, April 2. Spent a good part of the morning in talking with those who came to take their leave; and tongue cannot express what a sorrowful parting we had. Floods of tears flowed plentifully; and my heart was so melted down, that I prayed for them with strong cryings, and many tears. The scene was very affecting, and, I think, must have made an impression upon the most hardened heart.

About one I was obliged to force myself away. Crowds were waiting at the door to give me a last farewell, and near twenty friends accompanied me on horseback. Blessed be God, for the marvellous great kindness he hath shown me in this city. Many sinners, I believe, have been effectually converted. It is unknown what numbers have come to me under convictions, and all the children of God have been exceedingly comforted. Various presents were sent me as tokens of their love. Several thousands of little books have been dispersed among the people; about two hundred pounds collected for the orphan-house, and many poor families relieved by the bounty of my friend Mr Seward. And what gives me the greater comfort is the consideration that my dear and honoured friend Mr Wesley is left behind to confirm those that are awakened; so that when I return from Georgia, I hope to see many bold soldiers of Jesus Christ. Grant this, O Lord, for thy dear son's sake.

KINGSWOOD.

Having taken my leave, and passed through the people of Bristol, who poured out many blessings upon me, I came about two to Kingswood, where the colliers, unknown to me, had prepared a hospitable entertainment, and were very forward for me to lay the first stone of their school. At length I complied, and a man giving me a piece of ground, in case Mr C—

should refuse to grant them any, I laid a stone, and then kneeled down on it, and prayed God that the gates of hell might not prevail against our design. The colliers said a hearty amen; and after I had given them a word of exhortation suitable to the occasion, I took my leave, promising that I would come amongst them again, if ever God should bring me back to England. They seemed much pleased at this; and indeed they seem to have such an uncommon affection for me, that I hope a reformation will be carried on amongst them. And as for my own part, I had rather preach the gospel to the unprejudiced, ignorant colliers, than to the bigoted, self-righteous, formal christians. The colliers will enter into the kingdom of God before them.

THORNBURY.

About five, I and my friends got safe to Thornbury; where I had appointed to preach as on this day, when I was there last. The minister, I find, was offended at my doctrine, and therefore would not lend me the pulpit again. However, there being above a thousand people waiting to hear the word, I stood upon a table, and taught in the street. All was solemn and awful around us; every one behaved with gravity; and God gave me freedom of speech. The remainder of the evening was spent delightfully, in singing psalms and hymns with my dear companions; and had not the parting with my Bristol friends cast a little damp upon my heart, no one could have laid down his head to sleep with greater pleasure than I did. I find I never undertake a new thing for my Master, but he gives me new manifestations of joy and comfort. Who but would work for Jesus Christ?

OLD-PASSAGE. CHEPSTOW.

Tuesday, April 3. Came to the Old-passage by nine in the morning, and, according to appointment, preached from some steps to many people who came to hear me. Then I exhorted, and sung with as many as the room would contain above in the inn; and having providentially lost our passage, about three in the afternoon I preached a second time from the steps, at which many

were much affected. The remainder of the day I spent in writing and praying with my friends; and having taken a last farewell, we passed over to Beechly, about seven, and got so far as Chepstow, where the people, I find, expected to hear me; but it being late, I could only sing and pray, and preach to about forty that came to the inn, and gave a promise, if possible, that I would come and preach in their church before I left Wales. Every day do I see the benefit more and more of this public way of acting.

HUSK AND PONTYPOOL.

Wednesday, April 4. Came hither before ten, and was much refreshed with the sight of my dear brother Howel Harris, and several christian friends, who came from Cardiff, and other places, to give me the meeting. The pulpit being denied, I preached upon a table under a large tree to some hundreds, and God was with us of a truth. After dinner, with near forty on horseback, I set out for Pontypool, five Welch miles from Husk, and in the way was informed, by a man that heard it, that Mr C—— H——ry did me the honour, at the last Monmouth assizes, to make a public motion to judge P——d, to stop me and brother Howel Harris from going about teaching the people. Poor man! he put me in mind of Tertullus in the Acts. But the hour is not yet come; I have scarce begun my testimony: for my finishing it, my enemies may have power over me from above. Lord, prepare me for that hour. About five we got to Pontypool, and several thousands were ready to hear me. The curate being very solicitous for it, I preached first (he having read prayers) in the church; but there being great numbers that could not come in, I went afterward and preached to all the people in the field. My own heart was much enlarged, and the divine presence was much amongst us; and, indeed, I always find I have most power when I speak in the open air. A proof this to me, that God is pleased with this way of preaching. After sermon, we went and joined in prayer at the gentlewoman's house that owned the field, and then we returned to the house of Mr G——s, of

Pontypool; where, after taking a little supper, and expounding the third chapter of Genesis to two rooms full of people, I prayed, and betook myself to rest, and was full of such unutterable love, as no one can conceive but those who feel it. God be praised for my coming hither. Here are many gracious souls, and their hearts are knit to me in Christian love. Lord, what am I?

ABERGAVENNY AND COMIHOY.

Thursday, April 5. Spent some time very comfortably with my dear friends at Pontypool, in singing, praying, and religious conferences; and then, in company with about thirty on horseback, I came to Abergavenny, ten miles from Pontypool, by eleven in the morning. All the way as we journeyed, God strengthened me mightily in the inner man, and I could think of nothing so much as Joshua going from city to city, and subduing the devoted nations. Here I expected much opposition, having been informed that many intended to disturb me.

But God impressed a divine awe upon all; so that though there were many opposers present when I preached, yet not any dared to utter a word. God caused me to speak with extraordinary authority, and I did not spare the polite scoffers in the least. Oh that they may come to the knowledge of the truth, and be saved! The place I preached from, was the backside of a garden, belonging to one Mr W—s, who invited me to Abergavenny, and erected a place very commodious for my standing upon; so that the people (in number about two thousand) could all hear very well. Afterwards we retired, and sung a hymn; and some ladies having the curiosity to come and hear us, I took that opportunity of dissuading them against balls and assemblies, and all other polite entertainments. I hope God intended them good: for, afterwards, I heard they were the chief mistresses of the assembly in Abergavenny. Oh the polite world! how are they led away by lying vanities!

After dinner I went, according to appointment, with about forty on horseback, to Comihoy, five miles from

Abergavenny, and found the minister of the church to be a hearty friend, and two or three others like-minded with him. This rejoiced me exceedingly; and to see how loving the poor people were to me, much increased my joy. The church not being quite large enough to hold half the congregation, I preached from the cross in the churchyard. The word came with power. Did not God call me elsewhere, I could spend some months in Wales very profitably: the longer I am in it, the more I like it. To me they seem a people sweetly disposed to receive the gospel.—They are simple and artless. They have left bigotry more than the generality of our Englishmen; and through the exhortations of Howel Harris, and the ministry of others, they are hungering and thirsting after the righteousness of Jesus Christ. When I had done, I hastened back with my friends to Abergavenny, where we were kindly entertained; and after having written a letter or two, and expounded to three rooms full of people, I went to bed, rejoicing that my eyes every day saw the salvation of God.

CARLEON AND TRELEK.

Friday, April 6. Set out about eight in the morning from Abergavenny, with near a dozen friends on horseback; and soon after, near fifty or sixty more joined us, most of whom, I hope, had been effectually called by the grace of God. About noon we reached Carleon, fifteen miles from Abergavenny, a town famous for having thirty British kings buried in it, and producing three noble christian martyrs. I chose particularly to go hither, because when my brother Howel Harris was there last, some of the baser sort beat a drum, and huzzaed around him, on purpose to disturb him; but God suffered them not to move a tongue now, though I preached from the very same place, and prayed for him by name, as I have in every place where I have preached in Wales. God forbid I should be ashamed either of my Master or his servants. Many thousands were there from all parts to hear me, and God gave me such extraordinary assistance, that I was carried out beyond

myself; and I believe the scoffers felt me to some purpose. Oh, that the love of Christ may melt them down!

After dinner we parted with some of our friends, who were obliged to return home, because they came from far; and it gave me great pleasure to see how affectionately the poor people came, with tears in their eyes, blessing God for my ministry, shaking me by the hand, and praying for my speedy return amongst them. Surely godliness has the promise of the life that now is, as well as that which is to come. The numbers of my enemies are inconsiderable, but my friends cannot be numbered; and what gives me more satisfaction, is, that they are friends of God's making, not of the world's, who follow not only for interest, but such as love me for the sake of Jesus Christ, and who, I believe, would go with me to prison, or to death.

At three in the afternoon we set out for Trelek, ten Welch miles from Carleon; but the miles being very long, we could not reach thither till it was almost dark; so that most of the people who had been waiting for me, were returned home. However, the church being denied, I stood upon the horse-block before the inn, and preached from thence for about three quarters of an hour to those that were left behind; but I could not speak with such power as usual; for, though the spirit was willing, the flesh was weak through the fatigue of the past day. Lord, when shall I be delivered from the burden of this flesh

CHEPSTOW.

Saturday, April 7. Found myself but weak in body when I rose in the morning, and it being a very rainy day, I resolved to stay at Chepstow, which we reached by eleven of the clock. Great numbers, that came from the countries round about, were ready to hear; but the minister being unwilling to lend the pulpit on a week day, I only exhorted the people in the dining-room where I lodged. I believe God was with us. Oh, how swiftly has this week passed off! To me it has been but as one day. How do I pity those polite ones, who complain that time hangs heavy upon their hands! Let

them but love Christ, and spend their whole time in his service, and they will find no dull melancholy hours. Want of the love of God I take to be the chief cause of indolence and vapours. Oh, that our gentry would up and be doing for Jesus Christ! They would not complain then for the want of spirits.

Sunday, April 8. Arose much refreshed, and highly pleased with the last afternoon's retirement; read prayers, and preached twice at Chepstow church to very attentive congregations, many of whom came from far. After sermon, I gave a word of exhortation, and prayed with several that came to the inn, and God was pleased to give it his blessing. About five I set out with my friends to Colford, eight miles from Chepstow, and went and visited the religious society, which has met with much opposition. Good God! wherever I go, people are ready to perish for lack of knowledge, and are as ignorant of Jesus Christ as the Papists. My heart within me is broken because of the prophets. Jer. 23.

At night I was pleased with the company of several friends, who came from Pontypool to see me once more. We spent the evening very agreeably in singing psalms, prayer, and conversation, and, I hope, edified one another in love.

COLFORD AND GLOUCESTER.

Monday, April 9. Preached this morning in the Market-house to about one hundred people, and afterwards talked with effect to some scoffers at the inn. After this I set out for, and reached Gloucester about noon, where I was refreshed by a great packet of letters, giving me an account of the success of the gospel in different parts. God grant I may see it come as powerfully amongst my own countrymen.

GLOUCESTER.

Tuesday, April 10. Visited the religious society last night, preached at four in the afternoon to a great congregation at St Michael's church, visited a society near the West-gate-street at seven, and another at eight; the last of which was very much crowded. Oh, what

unspeakable pleasure does it give me, to see my own townsmen receive the word with joy!

Wednesday, April 11. Was treated this day as I expected, and as I told my friends I should be used, when I first entered the city. The minister of St Michael's was pleased to lend me his church yesterday and to-day; but some wealthy Demetriuses being offended at the greatness of the congregations, and alleging that it kept people from their business, he was influenced by some of them to deny the use of his pulpit any more on a week day. Alas! what an enmity there is in the natural man against the success of the gospel! How fond are they of Pharaoh's objection, "Ye are idle, ye are idle; therefore ye say, let us go worship the Lord."

About four I set out for Painswick, a town four miles distant from Gloucester, where the pulpit being denied, I preached to a very large congregation from the stairs belonging to the school-house, in one of the streets. Many were solicitous for me to come and preach at other neighbouring places also. At my return to Gloucester, my heart was much refreshed by the reception of near thirty letters from Bristol; all, I hope, from persons whose hearts God hath been pleased to touch, and powerfully convince of self-righteousness. Lord, not unto me, but unto thy name be all the glory.

Thursday, April 12. Spent the morning in answering some of my dear correspondents, and preached in the evening to near three thousand hearers, in a field belonging to my brother. Cry out who will against this my forwardness, I cannot see my dear countrymen and fellow christians everywhere ready to perish through ignorance and unbelief, and not endeavour to convince them of both.

Those who forbid me to speak to these poor baptized heathens that they may be saved, upon them I call to give a reason for their so doing; a reason which may satisfy not man only, but God. And, accordingly, I here cite them to answer it to our common Master. What their real reason is, whether envy, or "Master,

in so doing thou reproachest us ;" or ought else, shall, one day, be manifested to men and angels.

I am, and profess myself a member of the church of England. I have received no prohibition from any of the bishops ; and having had no fault found by them with my life or doctrine, have the same general license to preach, which the rectors are willing to think sufficient for their curates ; nor can any of them produce one instance of their having refused the assistance of a stranger clergyman, because he had not a written license ; and have their lordships, the bishops, insisted that no person shall ever preach occasionally without such special license ? Is not our producing our letters of orders always judged sufficient ? Have not some of us been allowed to preach in Georgia, and other places, by no other than our general commission, Take thou authority to, &c., nay, and therefore ordained that we might preach in Georgia ? His lordship of London allowed of my preaching there, even when I had only received deacon's orders ; and I have never been charged by his lordship with teaching, or living otherwise than as a true minister, and true son of the church of England. I keep close to her articles and homilies, which, if my opposers did, we should not have so many dissenters from her ; but it is most notorious, that for the moralizing iniquity of the priests the land mourns. We have preached and lived many sincere persons out of our communion. I have now conversed with several of the best of all denominations ; many of them solemnly protest that they went from the church, because they could not find food for their souls ; they staid amongst us till they were starved out.

I know this declaration will expose me to the illwill, not of all my brethren, but of all my indolent, earthly-minded, pleasure-taking brethren ; but were I not to speak, the very stones would cry out against them. Speak therefore I must, and will, and will not spare ; God look to the event. Whatever becomes of the pastors who feed themselves, and not the flock, I have borne my testimony, I have delivered my own soul.

After sermon I visited two crowded societies; many received the word with gladness; and to-day I felt such an intense love, that I could have almost wished myself accursed for my brethren according to the flesh. Oh, that they experimentally knew the things that belong to their peace, before they are everlastingly hid from their eyes!

Friday, April 13. Was much delighted with some more letters I received from some young soldiers of Jesus Christ. Redeemed what time I could to answer some of them; preached at noon to a much larger congregation than yesterday in the field; took a little refreshment, and went upon invitation to Chafford, eight miles from Gloucester, where I preached with great power to above three thousand souls, all which behaved with great decency, and, like new-born babes, seemed desirous to be fed with the sincere milk of the word. It rejoices me much to find that my countrymen also receive the gospel. Oh, that it may take deep root in their hearts!

Saturday, April 14. Lay at Stroud, about three miles from Chafford; preached in the fields belonging to the inn, at nine in the morning, to about six hundred people; went to Stonehouse to pay my dear flock a visit there; and being entreated most earnestly, as I passed through the town yesterday, at three I preached again at Painswick, to double the number I preached to before, and God was with us of a truth. As soon as I had done I hasted to Gloucester, according to appointment, and preached in the Boothall to, I believe, near five thousand people. Extraordinary power God was pleased to give me. I was uncommonly enlarged in prayer; and though I had preached twice, and rode some miles, yet I think I never spoke with greater demonstration of the Spirit. God will work, and who shall hinder?

After this I received another packet of letters from Bristol people, and was comforted by the coming of some more friends, with whom I took sweet counsel, and praised God lustily, and with a good courage. How are his mercies showered down upon me! What

enlargements of heart have I experienced this night. Oh, that I had a thousand tongues wherewith to praise my God! About three days ago I was much humbled, now am I exalted. Yet a little while, and I shall be humbled again. Thus God acts according as he seeth best for our souls.

Sunday, April 15. Preached by eight in the morning to a larger congregation than ever in my brother's field; went to the cathedral service at ten, and after dinner went to Stonehouse, being invited thither by the minister as well as people. It rained all the way going thither; but notwithstanding that, I believe three thousand souls were ready to hear me, and behaved with great decency and devotion whilst I was speaking to them. The church not being large enough to contain a third part of the auditory, I preached from a very commodious place on the outside; and though it rained the whole time, yet I did not observe one person leave the place before I had done. Afterwards many of the children of God came to me, rejoicing that free grace in Christ had been preached unto them, telling me it was food to their souls, and what they had experienced for some years. The other people also behaved most affectionately, and would have constrained me to abide with them all night; but being engaged to return back to Gloucester, I hasted thither through the rain, and expounded in the Boothall to about five thousand people. They behaved excellently well, and hung upon me to hear the word. All was hushed and solemn; and my delivering the word from a place just before where the judges sit, rendered it very awful. Oh, that I could plead the cause of my Lord and King, even Jesus Christ, with greater power!

Monday, April 16. Preached with an extraordinary presence of God amongst us at my brother's field about ten in the morning. Received a most comfortable packet of letters, giving me an account of the success of the gospel; visited the prison, took a little refreshment, preached to near a thousand at Oxnell, seven miles from Gloucester, being invited thither by the reverend Mr Pauncefoot, a worthy minister of Jesus Christ; then

returned, and preached my farewell discourse to more people than ever in the Boothall, and afterwards found my strength renewed, and my soul filled with divine love and joy in the Holy Ghost. Oh, what a mystery is the hidden life of a christian!

Had many merciful deliverances in going to and returning from Newent. Praise the Lord, O my soul, and all that is within me praise his holy name.

Received letters from Abergavenny, acquainting me how many had been convinced since I was there. Heard of one that had received the Holy Ghost immediately upon my preaching Christ. Received a letter from one under strong convictions; and, indeed, there is scarce a day passes over my head, but God shows me that he works effectually upon the hearts of many by my ministry. A proof this, I am sure, that the word preached is not my own, but God's. May he always own it in this manner. Even so Lord Jesus.

Tuesday, April 17. Spent this morning in visiting a private society, and conversing with many religious friends, who came from far to take their leave. About eleven, by the bishop's permission, I baptized, at the church of St Mary de Crypt, Mr Thomas W——d, a professed quaker, about sixty years of age, who was convinced of the necessity of being born again of water, as well as the Spirit. Many of Christ's faithful servants attended on the prayers around him, and I believe the Holy Ghost was with us of a truth. After the solemnity was over, I gave a word of exhortation from the font; and it being the place where I myself not long since had been baptized, it gave me an opportunity of reflecting on my own frequent breaches of my baptismal vow, and proving the necessity of the new birth from the office of our church. God, I believe, gave it his blessing.

After this, we returned, and gave private thanks; and having dined, prayed with, and taken leave of my weeping friends, and dispersed a great many of my sermons amongst the poor, I took horse. But, oh, what love did the people express for me! How many came to me weeping, and telling me what God had

done for their souls by my ministry! Oh, how did they pray for my return amongst them! Lord, I dared not expect such success among my own countrymen. When I came to the city, I found the devil had painted me in most horrible colours: for it was currently reported, that I was really mad; that I had said, I was the Holy Ghost, and that I had walked bareheaded through Bristol streets singing psalms. But God was pleased to show them that the devil was a liar, and that the words that I spoke were not those of a madman, but the words of soberness and truth. It often pleases me to think how God makes way for me into the hearts of his people, nay, even of his enemies, wherever I go. My first asking leave for the pulpit, and preaching in the fields, notwithstanding they are denied, puts me in mind of the children of Israel first entreating leave of Og, Sihon, &c. to go quietly through their land, but fighting their way through when leave was denied. Like them, by the strength of my divine leader, I shall at last be more than conqueror over all the Canaanites, and carnal teachers among the Israel of God.

CHELTENHAM, SEVEN MILES FROM GLOUCESTER.

Being earnestly invited by several of the inhabitants, I came hither, attended with about a dozen friends, by five o'clock; and the use of the pulpit being refused me, I preached on the bowling-green belonging to the Plough-inn. When I came in, the town I perceived was alarmed, by the people standing at their doors. At the first I found myself quite shut up. My heart and head were dead as a stone; but when I came to the inn my soul began to be enlarged. I felt a freedom in my spirit, and was enabled to preach with extraordinary power to near two thousand people. Many were convicted. One was drowned in tears, because she had said I was crazy; and some were so filled with the Holy Ghost, that they were almost unable to support themselves under it. This, I know, is foolishness to the natural and letter-learned men; but I write this for the comfort of God's children. They know what these things mean.

Wednesday, April 18. Preached this morning with power to a much larger congregation than we had last night. Several servants of God said, they never saw the like before. Whilst I was preaching I saw the people melted into tears, and, by their looks, showed that the Divine Presence was amongst them. We shall see greater things than these: for almost every day persons of all denominations come unto me, telling how they interceded in my behalf. And it shall now be my particular business, wherever I go, to bring all the children of God, notwithstanding their differences, to rejoice together. How dare we not converse with those that have received the Holy Ghost as well as we?

EVESHAM IN WORCESTERSHIRE, TWELVE MILES FROM
CHELTENHAM.

Continued at Cheltenham, for the sake of a little retirement, and some private business, till after dinner, and got safe to Evesham (where Mr Seward's relations live) about seven at night. I found there had been much talk about my coming, God wisely ordering it to engage and excite the people's attention. Several persons came to see me, amongst whom was Mr Benjamin Seward, whom God has been pleased to call by his free grace very lately. Both his circumstances before, and in conversion, much resemble those of St Paul; for he was bred up at the feet of Gamaliel, being at Cambridge for some years. As touching the law, so far as outward morality went, he was blameless; concerning zeal, opposing the church. My proceedings he could not like, and he had once a mind, he said, to write against Mr Law's enthusiastic notions in his "Christian Perfection." But lately it has pleased God to reveal his dear Son in him, and to cast him down to the earth, as he did Saul, by eight days' sickness; in which time he scarce ever eat, or drank, or slept, and underwent great inward agonies and tortures. After this, the scales fell more and more from the eyes of his mind. God sent a poor travelling woman that came

to sell straw toys, to instruct him in the nature of our second birth, and now he is resolved to prepare for holy orders, and to preach Christ and those truths straightway in every synagogue, which once he endeavoured to destroy. He is a gentleman of a very large fortune, which he has now devoted to God. And I write this to show how far a man may go, and yet know nothing of Jesus Christ. Behold, here was one who constantly attended on the means of grace, exact in his morals, humane and courteous in his conversation, who gave much in alms, was frequent in private duties; and yet, till about six weeks ago, as destitute of any saving experimental knowledge of Jesus Christ, as those on whom his name was never called, and who still sit in darkness, and the shadow of death. Blessed be God, that although not many rich, not many mighty, not many noble are called, yet some are. Who would but be accounted a fool for Christ's sake? How often has my companion and honoured friend Mr William Seward been deemed a madman, even by this very brother, for going to Georgia? But lo! God has now made him an instrument of converting his brother. This more and more convinces me that we must be despised, ere we can be vessels fit for God's use. As for my own part, I find, by happy experience, the more I am contemned, the more God delights to honour me, in bringing home souls to Christ. And I write this for the encouragement of my fellow labourers, who have all manner of evil spoken against them falsely for Christ's sake. Let them not be afraid, but rejoice, and be exceedingly glad: for the Spirit of God, and of glory, shall rest upon their souls.

Thursday, April 19. Went to Badsey, about two miles from Evesham, where Mr Seward's eldest brother lives. We were most kindly received, and I hope a true christian church will be in their house. About four in the evening, the churches, both at Evesham, Bengeworth, and Badsey, being denied, I preached from the Cross, in the middle of Evesham-street, to a great congregation, and went to Badsey. and preached

in Mr Seward's brother's yard to a great number of people, many of which came from Evesham to hear me again. God grant it may strike home to their hearts.

Friday, April 20. Preached about nine in the morning at the Cross, went to public worship, and received the sacrament. Preached at Badsey at five in the evening, and returned and expounded in the town-hall; which, though very large, was quite thronged. The recorder himself procured the keys for us, and great numbers of people were truly affected. The standing in the judge's place, and speaking from thence, gave me awful thoughts of God; and the consideration that I was speaking in the name of our great High Priest and Judge, animated me very much. Oh, that I had a thousand tongues, they should all be employed in his service.

OXON.

Saturday, April 21. Preached in the morning at Badsey to a weeping audience, joined in prayer, and set out for Oxon, which I reached about ten at night. I had been much pressed in spirit to hasten hither, and now I found the reason for it. For, alas! the enemy had got great advantage over three of our christian brethren, and driven them to deny Christ's visible church upon earth. They had so far influenced and deluded Mr Kinchin, a sincere and humble minister of Jesus Christ, that I found, through their persuasion, he had actually quitted his fellowship, and intended to resign his living. This, I must needs confess, gave me a great shock. For I knew what dreadful consequences would attend a needless separation from the established church. As for my own part I can see no reason for my leaving the church, however I am treated by the corrupt members and ministers of it: for I judge of the state of a church, not from the practice of its members, but its primitive and public constitutions. And so long as I think the articles of the church of England are agreeable to scripture, I am resolved to

preach them up without either bigotry or party zeal. For I love all that love the Lord Jesus.

Sunday, April 22. Being much concerned about Mr K.'s conduct, this morning I wrote him the following letter.

Oxon, April 22, 1739.

Dearest Mr K.

Just now have I received the blessed sacrament, and have been praying for you. Let me exhort you, by the mercies of God in Christ Jesus, not to resign your parsonage till you have consulted your friends at London. It is undoubtedly true, that all is not right when we are afraid to be open to our dear brethren. Satan has desired to sift you as wheat: he is dealing with you as he did with me some years ago, when he kept me in my closet near six weeks, because I could not do any thing with a single intention; so he would have you not preach till you have received the Holy Ghost in the full assurance of it, and that is the way never to have it at all: for God will be found in the use of means, and our Lord sent out his disciples to preach before they had received the Holy Ghost in that most plentiful manner at the day of Pentecost. Besides, consider, my dear brother, what confusion your separating from the church will occasion. The prison doors are already shut, one society stopped, and most afraid almost to converse with us. I can assure you, that my being a minister of the church of England, and preaching its articles, is a means, under God, of drawing so many after me. As for objecting about the habits, &c. good God! I thought we long since knew that the kingdom of God did not consist in any externals, but in righteousness, and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost. Oh! my dear brother, I travel in pain for you. Never was I more shocked at any thing than at your proceedings. I doubt not but you will pray to God that you may be kept from delusion at the reading of this: for I am not ignorant of Satan's devices, and I know he never more successfully tempts us than when he turns himself into an angel of light.

Oh! my dearest Mr K. do nothing rashly. Consult your friends, and do not break the heart of

Your most affectionate,
though unworthy brother in Christ,
G. W.

Visited the two societies, at the first of which many gownsmen did me the honour of coming to hear. Before I began, I desired them to behave like gentlemen and christians. I also prayed particularly for them, and applied myself in meekness and love to them at the end of my discourse. I bless God, an awe was impressed upon their minds, and they behaved quietly; but afterwards they followed me to my inn, and came uninvited up into my room. However, I took that opportunity of giving them a second exhortation. I found great freedom and sweetness in my spirit; and though some, no doubt, mocked, yet I believe some will remember what was said. Oh, how is the faithful city become a harlot! Oh, that my head were water, and mine eyes fountains of tears, that I might weep day and night for the members of this university! Lord, send forth thy light, and thy truth, and make them scribes ready instructed to thy heavenly kingdom.

Blessed be God for sending me hither. I find now it was his divine will: for our dear brother K. falling into such an error has given such a shock, that unless I had come, in all probability the brethren would have been scattered abroad like sheep having no shepherd. But God, I hope, will always have a remnant here left, which may take root downward, and bear fruit upward. Let all that love the Lord Jesus say amen.

Tuesday, April 24. Perceived myself much strengthened yesterday and this morning, and told my friends how these words were impressed upon me, "And more than meet the gathering storm." About nine o'clock, after I had exhorted the brethren, and pretty well established them in the faith, the vice-chancellor came in person to the house where we were assembled, having threatened to do so some time ago, if they continued to build up one another in that manner. He

sent for me down stairs, being informed that I was in the house. When I first saw him, I perceived he was in a passion, which he soon expressed in such language as this: "Have you, sir," says he, "a name in any book here?" "Yes, sir," said I; "but I intend to take it out soon." "Yes, and you had best take yourself out too," replied he, "or otherwise I will lay you by the heels. What do you mean," continued he, "by going about, and alienating the people's affections from their proper pastors? Your works are full of vanity and nonsense; you pretend to inspiration. If you ever come again in this manner among these people, I will lay you first by the heels, and these shall follow." Upon this, he turned his back and went away. I desired the brethren to join in prayer for him. Took my leave, being just going to set out as the vice-chancellor came in. I soon found by the comforts God gave me, how glorious it was to suffer any thing for the sake of Jesus Christ. However, I must not forget mentioning, that I exhorted all the brethren not to forsake the assembling themselves together, though no pastor should be permitted to come amongst them; for so long as they continued steadfast in the communion of the established church, I told them no power on earth could justify hindering them from continuing in fellowship, as the primitive christians did, in order to build up each other in the knowledge and fear of God. Oh, what advantage has Satan gained over us, by our brother K.'s putting off his gown! However, though he is permitted to bruise our heel, yet we shall, in the end, bruise his head. The gates of hell shall never prevail against the church of Jesus Christ, either visible or invisible.

About eight at night, I and my friends reached Uxbridge, where we were greatly refreshed by the coming of several brethren, and the receipt of some letters from Savannah. Blessed be God all is well; and I shall now think the time long till I embark for Georgia. Lord, let that people be precious in thy sight.

LONDON.

Wednesday, April 25. Reached London with my dear friends about ten in the morning; was received most tenderly by my dear brethren. Received a letter from Gibraltar, giving an account of the success of my labours in that garrison. Expounded to a society of holy women, and afterwards spent about two hours in close conference at Fetter-lane society. Thanks be to God, we talked with great sweetness and christian love, and unanimously declared against the principles of our three brethren, who lately made such confusion in Oxford. There must be heresies amongst you, that they which are approved may be made manifest.

Thursday, April 26. Assisted in administering the blessed sacrament at Islington; where the vicar, in conformity to the rubric, takes care to observe the octaves of Easter. After this I expounded to a large room full of people, and with such power and demonstration of the Spirit, as I never saw before. Surely the hearers' hearts were quite melted down by the preaching of the free grace of God in Christ Jesus to poor sinners. Floods of loving tears flowed from their eyes. In the evening I expounded to a society at St Mary-hill, and then retired to bed, wishing that all felt the comforts God was then pleased to communicate to my soul. Indeed I can say that the Lord is gracious.

Friday, April 27. Went this morning to Islington to preach, according to the appointment of my dear brother in Christ, the reverend Mr Stonehouse; but in the midst of the prayers, the church-warden came, demanding me to produce my license, or otherwise he forbade my preaching in that pulpit. I believe I might have insisted upon my right to preach, being in priest's orders, and having the presentation of the living at Savannah, which is in the Bishop of London's diocese, a stronger license than that implicit one by which hundreds of the inferior clergy are by his lordship permitted to preach: however, for peace sake, I declined preaching in the church; but after the communion

service was over, I preached in the churchyard, being assured my Master now called me out here, as well as in Bristol. The second lesson was Acts the xxiv. which contained the plausible speech Tertullus made against Paul, a ringleader of the sect of the Nazarenes, which God applied closely to my heart. And he was pleased so to assist me in preaching, and so wonderfully to affect the hearers, that I believe we could have went singing of hymns to prison. Let not the adversaries say I have thrust myself out of their synagogues; no, they have thrust me out. And since the self-righteous men of this generation count themselves unworthy, I go out into the highways and hedges, and compel harlots, publicans, and sinners to come in, that my Master's house may be filled. They who are sincere will follow after me to hear the word of God.

Expounded at night to a very large society in Wapping with great power, and perceived that the London people were much improved since I left them; indeed their hearts seem to be quite broken, and I believe they would pluck out their eyes if it were possible to serve me. Lord, sanctify my coming to them, and grant that they may receive a second benefit.

Saturday, April 28. Preached this morning again in Islington churchyard; and, blessed be God, the congregation was near as large again as yesterday, and the word was attended with extraordinary power. The second lesson was very applicable, being Acts xxv. I can say with St Paul, "Neither against the temple, nor against Cæsar have I done any thing," and yet I am put out of their synagogues, and reviled as an evil doer; but the scriptures must be fulfilled, "If they have persecuted me, they will also persecute you."

About six I expounded to a thronged society of women at Fetter-lane, and at eight on St Mary-hill. The portion of scripture that Providence directed me to, was the nineteenth of Genesis, which was very applicable to what happened. For some wicked men, men of Belial, came, and pressed, and broke down the door; but God was pleased to give me such power at the last,

that they were forced into an awful silence, and, I believe, they really felt the weight of God's word. The fierceness of men shall turn to thy praise, and the fierceness of them shalt thou restrain.

Sunday, April 29. Preached in the morning at Moorfields to an exceeding great multitude.—At ten went to Christ-church, and heard doctor Trapp preach most virulently against me and my friends, upon these words, "Be not righteous overmuch, why shouldest thou destroy thyself!" God gave me great serenity of mind; but alas! the preacher was not so calm as I wished him. His sermon was founded upon wrong suppositions, (the necessary consequence of his hearing with other men's ears,) not to say there were many direct untruths in it.—And he argued so strenuously against all inward feelings, that he plainly proved, that with all his learning, he knew nothing yet as he ought to know. I pray God rebuke his spirit, and grant that that sermon may never rise up in judgment against him.

Being weakened by my morning's preaching, in the afternoon I refreshed myself by a little sleep, and at five went and preached at Kennington-common, about two miles from London, where no less than thirty thousand people were supposed to be present; the wind being for me, it carried the voice to the extremest part of the audience.

All stood attentive, and joined in the psalm and Lord's prayer most regularly,—and I scarce ever preached more quietly in any church.—The word came with power.—The people were much affected, and expressed their love to me many ways.—All agreed it was never seen in this wise before.—Oh, what need have all God's people to rejoice and give thanks! I hope a good inroad has been made into the devil's kingdom this day. Lord, not unto me, but to thy name be all the glory.

Monday, April 30. Declined preaching to-day, that I might have leisure to write to some of my correspond-

ents, and make preparations for my poor orphans at Georgia.—Received letters this evening from thence, telling me of the affairs of that colony. At present they have but a melancholy aspect; but our extremity is God's opportunity.—Lord, thou callest me; lo! I come to do thy will.—Heard also that Mr K——n had got over his scruples, and of the wonderful success of my honoured friend Mr John Wesley's ministry in Bristol, and of much opposition at Oxon. Certainly God is about to bring mighty things to pass.

Tuesday, May 1. Preached after public service in Islington churchyard to a greater congregation than ever. And in the evening went to expound on Dowgate-hill, the house of Mr C—h; but when I came to the door, no less than two or three thousand people were gathered round it; so that to avoid a noise, I was obliged to stand up in the fore-street window, and preach to them in the street. And I think they behaved well; and they would have behaved much better, had they not been disturbed. Now know I more and more, that the Lord calls me into the fields: for no house or street is able to contain half the people that come to hear the word.—This is a time for doing; yet a little while, and a suffering time will come. I cannot follow him now; but I shall follow him afterwards.

Wednesday, May 2. Preached this evening again to above ten thousand at Kennington-common, and spent the remainder of the evening in conference with our brethren in Fetter-lane society.—I hope we do build up one another in our most holy faith.—Our brethren that have fallen into errors, have left us voluntarily.—And now the old leaven is purged out, we walk in the comforts of the Holy Ghost, and are edified.

Thursday, May 3. Was fully employed all day in making preparations for my voyage, and preached at six in the evening (a time I choose that people may not be drawn away from their business) at Kennington, and great power was amongst us.—The audience was more numerous and silent than yesterday, the evening

calm, and many went affected away. Glory be to God, I begin to find an alteration in the people's behaviour already. God grant it may increase more and more.

Saturday, May 5. Preached yesterday and to-day, as usual, at Kennington-common, to about twenty thousand hearers, who were very much affected.—The remainder of my time I spent in preparing things for Georgia.—I am not usually so much engaged in seculars ; but I as readily do this as preach, when it is the will of God.—It is a great mistake that some run into, to suppose religion consists only in saying our prayers ; but I think a man is no farther holy, than he is relatively holy. And he only will adorn the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ in all things, who is careful to perform all the civil offices of life, whether servant, master, or mistress, with a single eye to God's glory, and from a principle of a lively faith in Jesus Christ our Saviour.—This is the morality which I preach, and which shall stand as long as the rock on which it is founded ; while all morality set up in opposition to this shall sink, with its professors, into hell.

Sunday, May 6. Preached this morning in Moorfields to about twenty thousand people, who were very quiet and attentive, and much affected.—Went to public worship morning and evening ;—and at six preached at Kennington.—But such a sight never were my eyes blessed with before.—I believe there were no less than fifty thousand people, near fourscore coaches, besides great numbers of horses ; and what is most remarkable, there was such an awful silence amongst them, and the word of God came with such power, that all, I believe, were pleasingly surprised. God gave me great enlargement of heart. I continued my discourse for an hour and a half ; and when I returned home, I was filled with such love, peace, and joy, that I cannot express it.—I believe this was partly owing to some opposition I met with yesterday. It is hard for men to kick against the pricks.—The more they oppose, the more shall Jesus Christ be exalted.—Our adversaries seem to be come to an extremity, while for want

of arguments to convince, they are obliged to call out to the civil magistrate to compel me to be silent ; but I believe it will be difficult to prove our assemblies in the fields to be either disorderly or illegal. But they that are born after the flesh, must persecute those that are born after the Spirit.—Father, forgive them, for they know not what they do.

Monday, May 7. Had full employment again to-day in preparing for my voyage ; did not preach, only expounded in a private house, where ten pounds were collected for the orphans. Though I kept it as secret as possible, yet numbers of people crowded round the door ; so that I find myself more and more under a necessity of going out into the fields.

Received several letters of the fruits of my ministry in several places, and had divers come to me awakened, under God, by my preaching in the fields.

Tuesday, May 8. Preached in the evening, as usual, on Kennington-common.—Some considerable time before I set out from town, it rained very hard, so that once I thought of not going ;—but several pious friends joined in hearty prayer that God would be pleased to withhold the rain, which was done immediately.—To my great surprise, when I came to the common, I saw above twenty thousand people. All the while, except for a few moments, the sun shone out upon us ; and I trust, the Sun of Righteousness arose on some with healing in his wings.—For the people were melted down very much at the preaching of the word, and put up hearty prayers for my temporal and eternal welfare. Oh that they may enter into the ears of the Lord of Sabbath !

Wednesday, May 9. Waited at noon upon the honourable trustees for Georgia.—They received me with the utmost civility, agreed to every thing I asked, and gave me a grant of five hundred acres of land, to me and my successors for ever, for the use of the orphan-house.—My friend H—— also writes me word to-day from Georgia, that the general and officers are very kind to him upon my account ; so that, blessed be God

there is a comfortable prospect of all things going on as I could wish.

About four in the afternoon I was taken ill and deserted, which I always look upon as a certain preparative for some approaching mercy.—And so this was; for after God had enabled me to preach to about twenty thousand for above an hour at Kennington, he inclined the hearers' hearts to contribute most cheerfully and liberally towards the orphan-house.—I was one of the collectors, and it would have delighted any one to have seen with what eagerness and cheerfulness the people came up both sides the eminence on which I stood, and afterwards to the coach-doors to throw in their mites. Surely God must have touched their hearts: for when we came home, we found we had collected above forty-seven pounds, amongst which were sixteen pounds in halfpence; for which we endeavoured to give hearty thanks. God was pleased to pour into my soul a great spirit of supplication, and a sense of his free distinguishing mercies so filled me with love, humility, and joy, and holy confusion, that I could at last only pour out my heart before him in an awful silence. It was so full, that I could not well speak. Oh, the happiness of a communion with God!

Thursday, May 10. Preached at Kennington; but it rained most part of the day. There were not above ten thousand people, and thirty coaches. However, God was pleased so visibly to interpose in causing the weather to clear up, and the sun to shine out just as I began, that I could not avoid taking notice of it to the people in my discourse. Our minute philosophers, nay, and our christians, falsely so called, laugh at the notion of a particular providence. But to suppose a general, without holding a particular providence, is as absurd, as to imagine there can be a chain without being composed of links. Search the scriptures, and we shall find, that not a sparrow can fall to the ground without our heavenly Father, and that the very hairs of our head are numbered.

Friday, May 11. Preached at Kennington to a

larger audience than the last night, and collected twenty-six pounds fifteen shillings and sixpence for the orphan-house. The readiness wherewith the people gave is inexpressible. Indeed I can say they offered willingly. They could not have taken more pains, or expressed more earnestness, had they all been to have received an alms from me. A sign this, that the word of God has taken hold of their hearts. I found great sweetness of soul in myself; and being upon the publican and Pharisee, I was very earnest in endeavouring to convince the self-righteous Pharisees of this generation, and offering Jesus Christ freely to all, who, with the humble publican, feelingly and experimentally could cry out, God be merciful to me a sinner.

Saturday, May 12. Agreed to-day for myself, and eleven more, to go on board the Elizabeth, captain Allen, to Pensylvania; where I design, God willing, to preach the gospel in my way to Georgia, and buy provisions for my orphan-house. Lord, send thy angel before me to prepare my way.

Had many come to me this morning, acquainting me what God had done for their souls by my preaching in the fields; and in the evening preached to about twenty thousand people at Kennington as usual, the weather continuing remarkably fair whilst I was delivering my Master's message.—Though I was full of matter, yet I found a restraint upon my spirits, which prevented my speaking with my wonted freedom: however, I offered Jesus Christ to all that could apply him to their hearts by faith. Oh, that all would embrace him! The Lord make them willing in the day of his power.

Sunday, May 13. Preached this morning to a prodigious number of people in Moorfields, and collected for the orphans fifty-two pounds nineteen shillings and sixpence, above twenty pounds of which was in halfpence. Indeed they almost wearied me in receiving their mites; and they were more than one man could carry home. Thus will God make his power to be known. Went to public worship twice, and preached

in the evening to near sixty thousand people. Many went away because they could not hear; but God enabled me to speak, so that the best part of them could understand me well; and it is very remarkable what a deep silence is preserved whilst I am speaking. After sermon, I made another collection of twenty-nine pounds seventeen shillings and eightpence, and came home deeply humbled with a sense of what God has done for my soul. I doubt not but many self-righteous bigots, when they see me spreading out my hands to offer Jesus Christ freely to all, are ready to cry out, "How glorious did the reverend Mr Whitefield look to-day, when, neglecting the dignity of a clergyman, he stood venting his enthusiastic ravings in a gown and cassock upon a common, and collecting mites from the poor people?" But if this is to be vile, Lord grant that I may be more vile. I know this foolishness of preaching is made instrumental to the conversion and edification of numbers. Ye Pharisees, mock on, I rejoice, yea, and will rejoice.

Monday, May 14. Spent most of this day in visiting some friends, and settling my Georgia affairs. Spent the evening very agreeably with several quakers at the house of Mr Hy——m. How much comfort do those lose who converse with none but such as are of their own communion!

Tuesday, May 15. Preached this evening at Kennington, and God was pleased to send us a little rain.—But it rejoiced me greatly, for the people, notwithstanding, stood very attentive; and as soon as the rain came, I received uncommon strength from above. The good Lord water us all with the dew of his heavenly blessing.

Wednesday, May 16. Sent a quaker, whom God was pleased to convince, to be baptized by my dear brother Mr Stonehouse. Waited upon the honourable trustees, who still treated me with the utmost civility.—Dined with some more serious quakers, and preached at Kennington, and have reason to bless God more and more for the order and devotion of those that come to

hear the word. Indeed they behave as though they believed God was standing at their right hand.

Thursday, May 17. Preached, after several invitations thither, at Hampstead-heath, about five miles from London. The audience was of the politer sort, and I preached very near the horse-course, which gave me occasion to speak home to their souls concerning our spiritual race. Most were attentive, but some mocked. Thus the word of God is either a savour of life unto life, or of death unto death. God's spirit bloweth when, and where it listeth.

Friday, May 18. Dined with several of the Moravian church, and could not avoid admiring their great simplicity, and deep experience in the inward life. At six, I preached in a very large open place in Shadwell, being much pressed by many to go thither. I believe there were upwards of twenty thousand people. At first, through the greatness of the throng, there was a little hurry; but afterwards, all was hushed and silent. I perceived a divine power come upon me from above. The word, I believe, made its way into their hearts, and very near twenty pounds were collected for the orphan-house. Blessed be God, we now begin to surround this great city. As the walls of Jericho once fell down at the sound of a few rams' horns; so I hope even this foolishness of preaching, under God, will be a means of pulling down the devil's strong holds, which are in and about the city of London.

Received several excellent letters, amongst which, was one from Mr Ralph Erskine, a field preacher of the Scotch church, a noble soldier of the Lord Jesus Christ. Oh, that all that were truly zealous knew one another! It must greatly strengthen each other's hands.

Saturday, May 19. Had the pleasure of being an instrument, under God, with Mr Seward, of bringing a young man out of Bethlehem, who was lately put into that place for being, as they term it, methodically mad. The way I came to be acquainted with him, was by his sending me the following letter.

“ To the reverend Mr Whitefield these,

“ Dear Sir,

“ I have read your sermon upon the new birth, and hope I shall always have a due sense of my dear Redeemer's goodness to me, that has so infinitely extended his mercy to me, which sense be pleased to confirm in me by your prayers ; and may Almighty God bless and preserve you, and prosper your ministerial function. I wish, sir, I could have some explanatory notes upon the New Testament, to enlighten the darkness of my understanding, to make me capable of becoming a good soldier of Jesus Christ ; but, above all, should be glad to see you. I am,

“ Dear Sir,

“ Yours affectionately, with my whole heart,
“ Bethlehem Hospital, No. 50.” “ Joseph Periam.”

According to his request I paid him a visit, and found him in perfect health both in body and mind. A day or two after, I and Mr Seward went and talked with his sister, who gave me the three following symptoms of his being mad. First, that he fasted for near a fortnight. Secondly, that he prayed so as to be heard four story high. Thirdly, that he had sold his clothes, and given them to the poor. This the young man himself explained to me before ; and ingenuously confessed, that under his first awakenings, he was one day reading the story of the young man whom our Lord commanded to sell all, and to give to the poor, and thinking it must be taken in the literal sense, out of love to Jesus Christ he sold his clothes, and gave the money to the poor. This is nothing but what is common to persons at their first setting out in the spiritual life. Satan will, if possible, drive them to extremes. And if such young converts were left to God, or had some experienced person to consult with, they would soon come into the liberties of the gospel. But how should those who have not been tempted like unto their brethren, be able to succour those that are tempted ?

May the 5th I received a second letter from him.

“ Query 1. If repentance does not include a cessation from sin, and turning to virtue, and though notwithstanding I want that deep contrition mentioned by some divines, yet as I live not wilfully in any known sin, and firmly believe the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ, may I not thereby be entitled to the benefits of Christ's death and resurrection, in the perseverance of knowledge, and practice of my duty ?

“ Query 2. If I am in prison, whether I may not, without offence to God, make use of endeavours to be discharged, by which I may be enabled to get into a pious christian family, and consequently be grounded and firmly settled in the love of God, it being my desire, for I am surrounded with nothing but profaneness and wickedness ?

“ Query 3. If my objections to being imprisoned are inconsistent or wicked, which are, that I am obliged to submit to the rules of the house, in going to my cell at seven or eight of the clock at night, and not let out till six or seven in the morning, by which I am debarred the use of candle, and consequently books ; so that all that time, except what is spent in prayer and meditation, is lost. Which exercises, though good, are, by so constant repetition, and for want of change, deadened ?

“ Query 4. If I should, by the goodness of God, be discharged, whether I may, without offence to the gospel of Jesus Christ, follow the business of an attorney-at-law, to which I was put as a clerk ; and by a conscientious discharge of that duty, be thereby entitled to a heavenly inheritance, my fear in this point arising from our Lord's advice about going to law, Matthew v. 40.

“ Query 5. If I cannot be discharged by proper application, (which application pray be pleased to let me have,) how can I best spend my time to the glory of God, myself and brethren's welfare ; And please to give me rules for the same.

“ Worthy Sir,

“ These questions, whether momentary or not, I

leave to your judgment. If you think they deserve an answer, should be glad to have them solved; for as I am sensible of the power of my adversary, the devil, surely I cannot but act with the utmost circumspection, which gives me occasion to trouble you herewith; and I hope, sir, the circumstance of the place I am in, may excuse the manner in which I have wrote to you, and count it not an affront; for God is witness how I love and esteem ministers of Jesus Christ; for whose dear sake, may the God of infinite love and goodness establish and confirm you in the daily success of your ministerial labours, which are the daily prayers of

“Your most unworthy,

“But faithful humble servant,

“Bethlehem, No. 50. May 5, 1739.” “Joseph Periam.”

“P. S. I am afraid, sir, I misbehaved myself when you so kindly came to see me: but if I did in any measure, your christian love and charity will excuse it; for not being warned of your coming, the surprise, though pleasant, so fluttered my spirits, that I was overburdened with joy.

“O how pleased should I be to see you!”

To this I sent the following answer.

“Dear Sir, May 7, 1739

“The way to salvation is by Jesus Christ, who is the way, the truth, and the life. The way to Christ is by faith. Whosoever liveth and believeth in me, says our Lord, though he were dead, yet shall he live. But this faith, if it is a saving faith, will work by love. Come then to Jesus Christ as a poor sinner, and he will make you a rich saint. This, I think, serves as an answer to your first query.

“It is, no doubt, your duty, whilst you are in the house, to submit to the rules of it; but then you may use all lawful means to get yourself out. I have just now been with your sister, and will see what can be done farther. Watch and pray.

“As for the business of an attorney, I think it unlawful for a christian, at least exceeding dangerous.

Avoid it therefore, and glorify God in some other station. I am,

“ Dear Sir,

“ Your affectionate friend and servant,

“ G. W.”

A day or two after I received a third letter, which is as follows.

“ Worthy Sir,

“ I received your letter, which was a full answer to my queries, and give you, my hearty thanks for the trouble you have taken upon you, (the only gratitude I can at present pay;) but he, whom I have perfectly at heart, will supply the deficiency to you, and will not suffer a meritorious act to go unrewarded. O how do I daily experience the love of Christ towards me, who am so vile, base, and unworthy! I pray God I may always be thankful, and both ready to do and suffer his most gracious will, which, I trust, through your prayers and God's grace, I shall at all times submit to.

“ My father was with me last night, when I showed him your letter. I told him, I utterly renounced the business of an attorney. He then asked what profession I chose, which I submitted to him, on condition it might prove agreeable to the will of God. He was pleased to say, he thought me not mad, but very well in my senses, and would take me out, on condition doctor Monro and the committee were of his opinion. Then he varied again, and thought it convenient for me to stay the summer, and so to take physic twice a week, fearing a relapse. I told him, as a father, he should be wholly obeyed; but when at parting he mentioned my leaving religion, (or words to that purpose, at which I was somewhat stirred in my spirit,) I told him, nothing should prevail upon me to leave Jesus Christ; upon which he left me. This is the substance of what passed between us, which, I hope, is not amiss to let you know of, as you have been so kind as to plead for my liberty.

“ Upon the whole of the matter, sir, God gives me

perfect resignation, and I trust when he shall see fit, will discharge me ; and as I find his love daily more and more shed abroad in my heart, all things will work together for my good. Pray, sir, be thankful for me, and if opportunity will let you, I should be sincerely glad to see you before you set out for America. And may Almighty God, in his infinite goodness, prosper, guide, and protect you through this transitory life, and hereafter receive you triumphantly into the heavenly Jerusalem, there to converse with, and see the ever-blessed Jesus, that dear lamb of God ; to which that you may attain, are the hearty and fervent wishes of

“ Your loving and sincere friend,

“ Wednesday, May 9, 1739.” “ Joseph Periam.”

“ I am ashamed to trouble you thus, but my heart is full of you.”

Upon reading this, I was sensibly touched with a fellow-feeling of his misery ; and, at my request, Mr Seward, and two more friends, waited upon the committee. But alas ! they esteemed my friends as much mad as the young man, and frankly told them, both I and my followers, in their opinion, were really beside themselves. My friend Seward urged the example of the young persons, who called the prophet that was sent to anoint Jehu king, a mad fellow ; of our Lord, whom his own relations, and the Scribes and Pharisees, took to be mad, and beside himself, and Festus's opinion of St Paul. He further urged, that when young people were under their first awakenings, they were usually tempted by the devil to run into some extremes. But all such language confirmed the gentlemen more and more, that Mr Seward was mad also. And to prove that the young man was certainly mad, they called one of the attendants, who said, when Mr Periam first came into the place, he stripped himself to his shirt, and prayed. The reason of this, as Mr Periam said afterwards, was, that he might innure himself to hardship at once : for being brought from Bethnal-green, where he was taken great care of, into a cold place, without windows, and a damp cellar under

him, he thought it best to season himself at first, that he might learn to endure hardness as a good soldier of Jesus Christ. In the midst of the conference, some way or other, they mentioned his going to Georgia, and said, if I would take him with me, they would engage that his father should give leave to have him released. A day or two after, Mr Seward waited upon his father, who gave his son an excellent character, and consented to his going abroad. After this, he waited upon the doctor, who pronounced him well. And to-day he waited again upon the committee, who behaved very civilly, and gave the young man a discharge.

He is now with me, and I hope will be an instrument of doing good. The hardships he has endured at Bethlehem, will, I hope, prepare him for what he must undergo abroad. And being now not ignorant of Satan's devices, he will be better qualified to prevent his getting an advantage over others. Before I leave my account of him, I cannot help telling what usage he met with at his first coming into Bethlehem. Being sensible within himself, that he wanted no bodily physic, he was unwilling at first to take it; upon which, four or five took hold of him, cursed him most heartily, put a key into his mouth, threw him upon the bed, and said, though I had then never seen or heard of him, you are one of Whitefield's gang, and so drenched him. I hear also, that there was an order given, that neither I, nor any of my friends, should be permitted to come unto him. Good God! how shortly will that day come when these unhappy men shall be heard to cry out, "We fools counted their lives madness, and their ends to be without honour! How are they numbered among the children of God? How is their lot among the saints?"

Dined at Clapham with Mr B——n a quaker. Preached in the evening at Kennington-common to about fifteen thousand people, who were very attentive and affected. Afterwards I spent two hours at Fetter-lane society, where we had a most useful conference concerning the necessity every christian lay under to

have some particular calling, whereby he may be a useful member of the society to which he belongs. We all agreed to this unanimously; and as for my own part, I think, if a man will not labour, neither ought he to eat. To be so intent on pursuing the one thing needful, as to neglect providing for those of our own households, in my opinion, is to be righteous overmuch.

Sunday, May 20. Went with our brethren of Fetter-lane society to St Paul's, and received the holy sacrament, as a testimony that we adhered to the church of England.

Preached at Moorfields and Kennington-common, and at both places collected very near fifty pounds for the orphan-house. A visible alteration is made in the people's behaviour; for though there were near fifteen thousand in the morning, and double the number in the afternoon, yet they were as quiet during my sermon, as though there had not been above fifty persons present. I did not meet with a moment's interruption. I could say of the assembly, as Jacob did on another occasion, surely God is in this place.

HERTFORD.

Monday, May 21. Was fully engaged all the morning in settling my Georgia affairs. Left London about three—called and prayed at a house or two in the way, and reached Hertford between eight and nine at night. I never saw a town so much alarmed. The streets were every way crowded; and, by the behaviour of some, I thought we should have had many scoffers. But, blessed be God, I never preached to a more quiet congregation. The hearers were in number about four or five thousand, and the place I preached in was a common near the town. Afterwards, a certain gentlewoman, Lydia-like, constrained both me and my friends, if we judged her worthy, to come and abide in her house that night, which we did to our great comfort. The Lord reward her a thousand fold.

HERTFORD AND OULNEY IN BUCKINGHAMSHIRE.

Tuesday, May 22. Preached about seven in the morning from the same place, and to near as large a

congregation as I did last night. God gave me uncommon power, and all, I hope, went away convinced that my doctrine was of God. Breakfasted with Mr S—d, a dissenting minister, who kindly invited and received me and my friends. Dined at Hitchen. Promised at the request of many to preach to them, God willing, on Friday morning, and reached Oulney about ten at night, where I long since promised to come. Here also God had prepared a table for us; and here I was not a little comforted with meeting with the reverend Mr Rogers of Bedford, who, like me, has lately been thrust out of the synagogues, for speaking of justification by faith and the new birth, and has commenced a field-preacher. Once he was shut in prison for a short time, but thousands flock to hear him, and God blesses him more and more. I believe we are the first professed ministers of the church of England that were so soon, and without cause, excluded every pulpit. Whether our reverend brethren can justify such a conduct, the last day will determine.

Wednesday, May 23. Being denied the pulpit, I preached this morning in a field near the town, to about two thousand people, with much freedom and power. They were very attentive, and I could have continued my discourse much longer; but the bells ringing for prayers, I adjourned my hearers to public worship, where many of them went, and God was pleased to speak to us much in the second lesson. How powerfully does the word of God come to our hearts, when we experience it! otherwise, it is a dead letter.

NORTHAMPTON.

Reached Northampton about five in the evening, and was most courteously received by doctor Doddridge, master of the academy there.

At seven, according to appointment, I preached to about three thousand hearers on a common near the town, from the starting-post. Great power, I believe, was amongst us, and I preached with wonderful pleasure; because I thought I had then actual

possession of one of the devil's strong holds. Oh, that we may all run so as to obtain the crown of life, which God, the righteous judge, will give, at the last day, to all that love our Lord Jesus in sincerity.

Thursday, May 24. Preached again in the same place at about eight in the morning, but to a much larger audience. Breakfasted with some pious friends. Was greatly comforted by several choice children of God, who came to me from different parts, and left Northampton about eleven, rejoicing with my friends at the mighty things God had already done, and was yet about to do for us. Many righteous souls live in and about Northampton, and nothing confirms me more in my opinion, that God intends to work a great work upon the earth, than to find how his children of all denominations every where wrestle in prayer for me.

OULNEY.

Being much solicited thereto, after sermon yesterday, I hastened, in company with near a dozen friends, to Oulney, eight long miles from Northampton, and got thither about ten of the clock. Great numbers were assembled together; but on account of its being a rainy day, it was judged inconvenient to preach in the fields. I therefore stood upon an eminence in the street, and preached from thence with such power as I have not for some time experienced. Though it rained all the time, yet the people stood very attentive and patient. All, I really believe, felt, as well as heard the word, and one was so pricked to the heart, and convinced of sin, that I scarce ever saw the like instance. The word of God is quick and powerful, and sharper than a two-edged sword.

BEDFORD.

Hasted away as fast as possible from Oulney to Bedford, where I had promised, God willing, to preach to-night. About seven we got thither, and found the town fully alarmed. About eight, I preached from the stairs of a windmill (the pulpit of my dear brother and fellow-labourer Mr Rogers) to about three thousand

people; and God was pleased to give me such extraordinary assistance, that I believe few, if any, were able to resist the power wherewith God enabled me to speak. My heart was full of God, and I spake as one having authority. God caused me to renew my strength, and gave me such inward support, that my journey did not affect me. As my day is, so shall my strength be.

Friday, May 25. Preached at seven in the morning with great power, and rather a larger congregation than before. Took an affectionate leave of many gracious souls, and reached Hitchen, ten miles from Bedford, about one of the clock at noon. The town I perceived was much alarmed, and many devout souls came from far to hear me. About two, I got upon a table in the market-place, near the church; but some were pleased to ring the bells in order to disturb us. Upon this, not having begun, we removed into a most commodious place in the fields; but being a little fatigued with my ride, and the sun beating most intensely upon my head, I was obliged, in a short time, to break off, being exceeding sick and weak. A kind gentlewoman offered me her house, where I went, and lay down for about two hours, and then came and preached near the same place, and God was with us. It was surprising to see how the hearts of the people were knit to me. I could have continued longer with them; but being under an engagement to go to St Alban's, I hastened thither, but could not preach on account of my coming in so late. Great numbers had been there expecting me; and it grieved me to think how little I could do for Christ. For he is a gracious Master, and had I a thousand lives they should be spent in his service.

ST ALBAN'S AND LONDON.

Saturday, May 26. Had a comfortable night's rest, which much refreshed me. Preached at seven in the morning to about fifteen hundred people in a field near the town with great power, and got safe to London by two in the afternoon. Blessed be God, this

has been a week of fat things. Many further inroads have been made in Satan's kingdom. Many sinners convicted, and many saints much comforted and established in their most holy faith. I find there are some thousand secret ones yet living amongst us, that have not bowed the knee to Baal, and this public way of acting brings them out. It much comforts me wherever I go, to see so many of God's children, of all communions, come and wish me good luck in the name of the Lord. I perceive people would be every where willing to hear, if the ministers were ready to teach the truth as it is in Jesus. Lord, do thou spirit up more of my dear friends and fellow-labourers to go out into the highways and hedges, to compel poor sinners to come in. Amen.

Received an excellent letter from the reverend Mr Ebenezer Erskine of Scotland, brother to Mr Ralph Erskine, acquainting me of his preaching last week to fourteen thousand people. Blessed be God, there are more field-preachers in the world beside myself. The Lord furnish us all with spiritual food wherewith to feed so great multitudes.

Preached in the evening at Kennington-common to about fifteen thousand people, and we had an extraordinary presence of God amongst us. Oh! that all who object against this way of preaching would come and see; all sincere persons must go convicted away.

Sunday, May 27. Preached this morning at Moorfields to about twenty thousand, and God manifested himself still more and more. My discourse was near two hours long. My heart was full of love; and people were so melted down on every side, that the greatest scoffer must have owned that this was the finger of God. Went twice to public worship, received the blessed sacrament, and preached, as usual, in the evening at Kennington-common, to about the same number of people as I did last Lord's-day. Perceived I was a little hoarse; but God strengthened me to speak so as not only to be heard, but felt by most that stood near me. Glory be to God on high.

Monday, May 28. Preached, after earnest and frequent invitation, at Hackney, in a field belonging to one Mr Rudge, to about ten thousand people. I insisted much upon the reasonableness of the doctrine of the new birth, and the necessity of our receiving the Holy Ghost in its sanctifying gifts and graces, as well now as formerly. God was pleased to impress it most deeply upon the hearers. Great numbers were drowned in tears; and I could not help exposing the impiety of those letter-learned teachers, who say, we are not now to receive the Holy Ghost, and count the doctrine of the new birth enthusiasm. Out of your own mouths will I condemn you, you wicked and blind guides. Did you not, at the time of ordination, tell the bishop, that you were inwardly moved by the Holy Ghost, to take upon you the administration of the church? Surely, at that time, you acted the crime of Ananias and Sapphira over again. You lied not unto man, but unto God.

Tuesday, May 29. Went to public service at Westminster-abbey. Afterwards despatched business for my orphans, and preached at Kennington to a most devout auditory with much sweetness and power. The subject I treated of, was our Lord's miracle of the loaves and fishes; and I hope he who fed so many thousands with bodily bread, did feed my hearers' souls with the bread of life which cometh down from heaven.

Wednesday, May 30. Waited upon the bishop of Bristol (who treated me with the utmost civility) and received his lordship's benefaction for Georgia. At the request of many, I preached in the evening at Newington-common to about fifteen thousand people. A most commodious place was erected for me to preach from. The word came with power; and seeing a great multitude, I thought proper to collect for the orphan-house. Sixteen pounds nine shillings and four-pence were gathered on that occasion. Blessed be the Lord for thus prospering the work of my hands upon me.

Thursday, May 31. Was taken very ill this after.

noon; but God was pleased to strengthen me to go to Kennington, where I preached to my usual congregation; and three of my brethren in the ministry were pleased to accompany me, which filled the people with exceeding great joy. Thou Lord of the harvest send forth, we beseech thee, more labourers into thy harvest.

Friday, June 1. Dined at Oldford, gave a short exhortation to a few people in a field, and preached in the evening at a place called Mayfair, near Hyde-park-corner. The congregation, I believe, consisted of near eighty thousand people. It was, by far, the largest, I ever preached to yet. In the time of my prayers there was a little noise; but they kept a deep silence during my whole discourse. A high and very commodious scaffold was erected for me to stand upon; and though I was weak in myself, yet God strengthened me to speak so loud that most could hear; and so powerfully, that most I believe could feel. All love, all glory, be to God through Christ.

So weak, so frail an instrument,
If thou, my God, vouchsafe to use;
'Tis praise enough to be employed,
Reward enough, if thou excuse.

If thou excuse, then work thy will
By so unfit an instrument;
It will at once thy goodness show,
And prove thy power omnipotent.

Saturday, June 2. Sent another quaker to be baptized by Mr Stonehouse. Collected by private contributions near fifty pounds for the orphans, and preached in the evening to about ten thousand at Hackney, where twenty pounds twelve shillings and fourpence were gathered on the same occasion. Before I went out to preach, I was very sick and weak; but such power was given me from above, that I continued preaching for an hour and a half, and was so assisted, that the people were dissolved into tears, and wept most bitterly. It rained some considerable time, but

almost all were unmoved; and I was so enlarged, by talking of the love and free grace of Jesus Christ, that I could have continued my discourse till midnight. This promise, They that wait on the Lord shall renew their strength, is fulfilled in me daily. Oh, free grace in Christ Jesus our Lord!

Sunday, June 3. Preached at Moorfields to a larger congregation than ever, and collected twenty-nine pounds seventeen shillings and ninepence for the orphan-house; went twice to public worship, received the sacrament, and preached in the evening at Kennington-common, to the most numerous audience I ever yet saw in that place, and collected thirty-four pounds five shillings. When I mentioned my departure from them they were melted into tears. Thousands of ejaculations and fervent prayers were poured out to God on my behalf, which gave me abundant reason to be thankful to my dear Master. Oh, what marvellous great kindness has God shown me in this great city! Indeed I have seen the kingdom of God come with power, and cannot but say, Blessed are the eyes which see the things that we see, and hear the things which we hear; for many righteous souls have desired to see the things which we see, and hear the things which we hear, and have not heard them. I now go, I trust, under the conduct of God's Holy Spirit, to Pensylvania and Virginia, and from thence to Georgia, knowing not what will befall me, save that the Holy Ghost witnesseth in every place, that labours, afflictions, and trials of all kinds abide me. O, my dear friends, pray that none of these things may move me, and that I may not count even my life dear unto myself, so that I may finish my course with joy, and the ministry which I have received of the Lord Jesus. Into his hands I commend my whole spirit, soul and body; his will be done in me, by me, and upon me, for time, and for eternity. Let me do or suffer just as seemeth good in his sight. Only do thou, O Lord, give me that wisdom which dwelleth with prudence, that I may never suffer for my own misconduct, but only for righteousness' sake. Reward, O

Lord, my dear friends for all their works of faith, and labours of love. Forgive my enemies; and grant we may all effectually be called by thy free grace, and after death be translated to sit on thy right hand. Prepare me for the fiery trial wherewith I must be tried, and make me faithful to the trust committed to my charge. May I carefully watch the flock over which the Holy Ghost hath made me overseer, and may I, in all things, behave as a good steward of the manifold gifts of God. May the past mercies make me humble and truly thankful, and may I be prepared for those greater things which I am yet to see. May the souls of all to whom I have preached be precious in thy sight, and may we all meet to be one another's joy, and crown of rejoicing in the day of the Lord Jesus; though absent in body, may we be present in spirit, and always have reason to triumph because of the truth. May we go on from conquering to conquer, and see Satan, like lightning, fall from heaven. May God pour into our hearts a spirit of prayer and supplication, and may our prayers ascend up as an acceptable sacrifice through Jesus Christ. To whom, with thee, O Father, and thee, O Holy Ghost, three persons, and one God, be all glory, might, majesty, and dominion, now, and for evermore. Amen.

Captain of my salvation, hear!
 Stir up thy strength, and bow the skies;
 Be thou the God of battles near;
 In all thy majesty arise!

The day, the dreadful day's at hand!
 In battle cover thou my head:
 Past is thy word: I here demand,
 And confident expect thine aid.

Now arm me for the threatening fight,
 Now let thy power descend from high,
 Triumphant in thy Spirit's might,
 So shall I every foe defy.

I ask thy help; by thee sent forth
 Thy glorious gospel to proclaim,
 Be thou my mouth, and shake the earth,
 And spread by me thy awful name.

Steel me to shame, reproach, disgrace,
 Arm me with all thy armour now,
 Set like a flint my steady face,
 Harden to adamant my brow.

Bold may I wax, exceeding bold
 My high commission to perform,
 Nor shrink thy harshest truths t' unfold,
 But more than meet the gathering storm.

Adverse to earth's rebellious throng
 Still may I turn my fearless face,
 Stand as an iron pillar strong,
 And steadfast as a wall of brass.

Give me thy might, thou God of power
 Then let or men or fiends assail!
 Strong in thy strength, I'll stand a tower
 Impregnable to earth or hell.

To this continuation is affixed the following verses by
 the Rev. Charles Wesley.

TO THE REVEREND

MR. GEORGE WHITEFIELD.

Servant of God, the summons hear,
 Thy master calls, arise, obey!
 The tokens of his will appear,
 His providence points out thy way.

Lo! we commend thee to his grace!
 In confidence go forth! be strong!
 Thy meat his will, thy boast his praise,
 His righteousness be all thy song.

Strong in the Lord's almighty power,
 And arm'd in panoply divine,
 Firm mayst thou stand in danger's hour,
 And prove the strength of JESUS thine.

Thy breastplate be his righteousness,
 His sacred truth thy loins surround;
 Shod be thy beauteous feet with peace,
 Spring forth, and spread the gospel sound.

Fight the good fight, and stand secure
In faith's impenetrable shield ;
Hell's prince shall tremble at its power,
With all his fiery darts repell'd.

Prevent thy foes, nor wait their charge,
But call their ling'ring battle on.
But strongly grasp thy sevenfold targe,
And bear the world, and Satan down.

The helmet of salvation take,
The Lord's, the Spirit's conqu'ring sword,
Speak from the word—in lightning speak,
Cry out, and thunder—from the word.

Champion of God, thy Lord proclaim,
Jesus alone resolve to know ;
Tread down thy foes in Jesu's name :
Go—conquering, and to conquer go.

Thro' racks and fires pursue thy way,
Be mindful of a dying God ;
Finish thy course, and win the day :
Look up—and seal the truth with blood.

A CONTINUATION
OF THE
REV MR WHITEFIELD'S
JOURNAL,

DURING THE TIME HE WAS DETAINED IN ENGLAND
BY THE EMBARGO.

BLACKHEATH, IN KENT.

Monday, June 4. Went a second time to pay my respects to the archbishop of Canterbury, but his grace was gone out as before. Waited upon the bishop of London, who used me very civilly. Finished all my affairs according to my mind. Took leave of my weeping friends, and went in company with many of them to Blackheath, where was near as large a congregation, as there was at Kennington the last Lord's-day. I think I never was so much enlarged since I have preached in the fields. My discourse was near two hours long, and the people were so melted down, and wept so loud, that they almost drowned my voice. I could not but cry out, "Come, ye Pharisees, come and see the Lord Jesus getting himself the victory."—Afterwards, went to an inn upon the heath, where many came drowned in tears to take a last farewell. The remainder of the evening I spent most comfortably with several of my brethren, and went to bed about twelve o'clock, I hope, in some measure, thankful for the great things we had seen and heard.

BLENDON.

Tuesday, June 5. Went in the morning to Blendon, five miles from Blackheath, and enjoyed a sweet retreat

at the house of Mr Delamot. Preached with unusual power on Bexley common, at eleven in the morning, to about three hundred people, and in the evening, near Woolwich, to several thousands. My word, I believe, came with the demonstration of the Spirit. I returned to Blendon rejoicing, and spent the evening most delightfully with many dear christian friends, who came from London to see me. Oh, how does their sweet company cause me to long for communion amongst the spirits of just men made perfect! Accomplish, O Lord, I beseech thee, the number of thine elect, and hasten thy kingdom.

BEXLEY AND GRAVESEND.

Wednesday, June 6. Breakfasted with many friends, and gave a word of exhortation to many more that came from London to bid me adieu. Their hearts were ready to break with sorrow. But God, I hope, will supply my absence, by raising up more ministers to go in and out before them. About ten in the morning, read prayers, and preached at Bexley church, Mr Peers, the vicar, my brother and fellow-labourer in Christ, having given me a pressing invitation. The congregation was large, and my soul was so filled with God, that the word came with very great power to all that heard me. Blessed be God. After sermon we dined with Mr Peers, and having taken a farewell, we left our friends in tears, and hastened to Gravesend, where I read prayers, and preached in a church near the town to about six hundred people. I have no objection against, but highly approve of, the excellent liturgy of our church, would ministers lend me their churches to use it in. If not, let them blame themselves, that I pray and preach in the fields.

GRAVESEND, BEXLEY, AND BLENDON.

Thursday, June 7. Received two letters from persons, confessing, that they came to hear me out of a bad motive, but were apprehended by the free grace of Jesus Christ. Answered them, and some others. Read prayers, and preached in the same church as I did last night. Took some refreshment, and returned in the

evening, and preached in Bexley church, being much excited so to do by the kind solicitations of Mr Peers. The congregation was much larger than we could expect, and most, I believe, were much affected. Here some of Mr Delamot's family gave us the meeting. After sermon I returned to their house at Blendon, praising and blessing God that we had once more an opportunity of building up each other in our most holy faith. Oh! how sweet is this retirement to my soul! God is pleased to meet me in it, and vouchsafe me great measures of his divine presence. I must expect some fresh trials. Dearest Lord, sweeten all thy dispensations with a sense of thy love, and then deal with me as it seemeth good in thy sight!

Friday, June 8. Preached at Bexley in the morning, and at Charlton in the afternoon, whither I was invited by the earl and countess of Egmont. Both before and after sermon they entertained me with the utmost civility. My heart was much comforted by God, and at night I returned with my friends to my sweet retreat at Blendon. Oh! the comforts of having all of one mind in a house! It begins our heaven upon earth. Was I left to my own choice, here would be my rest. For I have a delight herein. But a necessity is laid upon me, and woe unto me if I preach not the gospel.

Saturday, June 9. Was much pleased and edified in reading bishop Hall's "Christ Mystical," and Erskine's sermons, both whose works, with Boehm's sermons, I would earnestly recommend to every one. Preached in the evening at Dulwich, to not a very large congregation, and went afterwards to Blackheath, and spent a most agreeable evening with many christian friends, who came thither on purpose to give me the meeting. Blessed be God, all behaved as though their conversation was in heaven.

BLENDON, BEXLEY, AND BLACKHEATH.

Sunday, June 10. Hastened back to Blendon, where more of our brethren came last night to see me. Preached with more power than ever, and assisted in

administering the sacrament to about two hundred communicants in Bexley church. Dined, gave thanks, and sung hymns at Mr Delamot's. Preached with great power in the evening on Blackheath, to above twenty thousand people, and collected sixteen pounds seven shillings for the orphans. After sermon I went to the Green Man, near the place where I preached, and continued till midnight, instant in prayer, praise, and thanksgiving, and christian conversation. I believe there were near fifty or sixty of us in all. Great decency and much devotion were to be seen. Numbers stood by as spectators. God enlarged my heart much in prayer and exhortation. And in short every thing was so well regulated, that all unprejudiced persons that came in must say, surely God is in this place.

Many of them watched unto prayer and praise all night. I think it every christian's duty to be particularly careful to honour and glorify God in places where he is most dishonoured. Some can sing the songs of the drunkards in public-houses, others can spend whole nights in chambering and wantonness, why should christians be ashamed to sing the songs of the lamb, and spend nights, as their Lord did before them, in exercises of devotion?

Silent have we been too long,
Aw'd by earth's rebellious throng,
Thee if we should still deny,
Lord, the very stones would cry,
Hallelujah.

BLACKHEATH, BEXLEY, DULWICH, AND BLENDON.

Monday, June 11. Prayed, sung with, and gave a warm exhortation to those that continued at Blackheath all night. Read prayers at Bexley church. Dined with Mrs S—, at Lewisham, a gentlewoman, who gladly received both me and my friends into her house. Preached in the evening to a much larger audience than before at Dulwich, and then hastened back to Blendon, in company with some who love our Lord Jesus in sincerity. Oh, how swiftly and delightfully do

those hours pass away which are spent in christian conversation !

BLENDON, BEXLEY, AND BLACKHEATH.

Tuesday, June 12. Read prayers at Bexley church. Begun, being pressed thereto both in spirit and by my friends, to put some of my extempore discourses into writing. Preached at Blackheath in the evening to about twenty thousand people, and spent the remaining part of the night, with rather more friends, and as much cheerfulness, decency, and devotion as on Sunday night last. Several people of different ranks stood by, as before : some, I hope, went away edified ; for God gave me great enlargement of soul, and the exhortation, which was long and powerful, I believe, reached their hearts. God grant we may thus always continue to let our light shine before men. It cannot but bring glory to our Father which is in heaven.

Wednesday, June 13. Retired in the morning to Blendon ; preached, as usual, at Blackheath, and went with my fellow-travellers to Lewisham, about a mile off, to the house of Mrs S—, who has frequently pressed me to abide there. How does God raise me up friends unsought for in every place ! Who would but naked follow a naked Christ ? After supper I expounded to, and prayed with several gentlemen and ladies whom Mrs S— had invited to hear the word. Oh, that it may take deep root in their hearts ?

Thursday, June 14. Spent the whole day in my pleasant and profitable retreat at Blendon ; and in the evening had the pleasure of introducing my honoured and reverend friend Mr John Wesley to preach at Blackheath. The Lord give him ten thousand times more success than he has given me ! After sermon, we spent the evening most agreeably, together with many christian friends at the Green Man. About ten we admitted all to come in that would. The room was soon filled. God gave me utterance. I exhorted and prayed for near an hour, and then went to bed, rejoicing that another fresh inroad was made into Satan's territories, by Mr Wesley's following me in field-

preaching as well in London as in Bristol. Lord, give the word, and great shall be the company of such preachers. Amen. Amen.

Friday, June 15. Continued at Blendon all day. Preached with great power in the evening at Blackheath to about as many as usual, and after retired to Lewisham, where I and my friends were again most kindly received by Mrs S—. May the Lord bless her house as he did the house of Obbedom, and make each of our souls an ark of the Holy Spirit.

Saturday, June 16. Returned in the morning to Blendon. Finished some writings I had in hand, and preached in the evening at Blackheath on Abraham's offering up his son Isaac. God make us partakers of such a working obedient faith!

Sunday, June 17. Preached with much power in Bexley church, and helped to administer to near three hundred communicants, most of which came from London. Baptized a person of twenty-eight years of age, whom God had worked upon by my ministry. Dined at Blendon, and took sweet counsel with many christian friends. Preached to above twenty thousand people at Blackheath, and afterwards supped again at the Green Man. There were near three hundred in the room. God was pleased to give me extraordinary assistance in exhorting and prayer, which I continued till eleven o'clock, and then retired to bed much pleased to think religion, which had long been sculking in corners, and was almost laughed out of the world, should now begin to appear abroad, and openly show herself at noon-day. Let them count us vain-glorious for thus confessing Christ before men. It is a small thing with us to be judged of men's judgment. To our own Master we stand or fall. What we are the last day will show.

HERTFORD.

Monday, June 18. An embargo being laid upon the shipping for some weeks, I had time to go to Hertford, whither I was invited by several pressing letters, declaring how God had worked by my ministry, when

I was there last. We dined and prayed with madam Cook of Newington and her family, and reached the place intended by seven at night. A most kind reception I met with from many christians. At eight I preached, according to appointment, with freedom of spirit, to about four thousand people, who were quite silent and attentive. Blessed be God, I found myself much stronger than when I was here last. God grant I may so live that my progress may be made known unto all men!

Tuesday, June 19. Preached this morning about seven of the clock to near three thousand people with uncommon enlargement of heart, and apparent success. Many came to me under strong convictions of their fallen estate, and their want of a God-man to be their mediator. Many I heard of besides who had been much worked upon by my preaching. Several christian families, I find, had been comforted. And such immediate effects produced, that I could not help rejoicing in spirit exceedingly. Breakfasted, dined, prayed, and sung hymns with Mr S—, a dissenting minister, was visited by some quakers, and in the afternoon waited upon Mr Th—ood, a baptist teacher, who, unknown to me, had sent a horse to fetch me from London. Preached about seven in the evening to about five thousand souls upon the faith of Abraham, in which God was pleased to give me great freedom, and the people great attention. I believe God has much people in and near Hertford. His especial providence which detains me in England sent me hither. I trust they have received a second benefit. Not unto me, O Lord, not unto me, but unto thy name, unto thy free grace in Christ Jesus our Lord, be all the glory.

BROAD-OAKS, IN ESSEX.

Wednesday, June 20. Set out about five in the morning, and hasted to Broad-oaks, about twenty miles from Hertford. About midway at Bishop-Stortford, as we were passing through, a person entirely unknown, constrained both me and my friends to come and refresh ourselves a little at his house. We accepted of

his offer, and found he was son to a gentleman, who had sent to engage me to preach at this place on Friday night next. Having spent an hour very agreeably with some christian friends, he went with us, and brought us on our way to Broad-oaks, the way being intricate. About twelve we got thither, and perceived that Providence had sent us most opportunely to a family, some of whom being born after the Spirit, are, for that reason, most violently opposed and persecuted by those foes of their own household, who are only born after the flesh. A clergyman has been employed to divert them from their present madness, as they call it; and has done them the honour of preaching against them. For this week past, they have been continually beset with numbers of such, who are lovers of pleasure more than lovers of God, and who would tell them, that a decent, genteel and fashionable religion, is sufficient to carry them to heaven. They knew nothing of my paying them this visit, which made them more thankful. No one can tell what a comfortable meeting God gave us. Surely it was heaven begun upon earth. We found the sweets of opposition, and rejoiced greatly in the prospect of suffering for Christ's sake. To increase our satisfaction, Mr Delamot, a convert of Mr Ingham's, came from Cambridge to meet us. He is scandalously opposed at that university. The students make him a proverb of reproach, and abuse him in the rudest manner. He has been forbid coming in to one college, and two or three that associate with him have been threatened much by their tutors for keeping him company. And here I cannot but remark what wonderful mercies God has shown this Mr Delamot's family. About three or four years ago, God was pleased to touch the heart of his brother Charles, who hearing that Mr Wesley was going to Georgia, though his father would have settled him in a very handsome way, offered to go abroad with him as a servant. His parents' consent was asked, but they, and almost all their relations, opposed it strenuously. However, the young man being resolute, and convinced that God called him, at

length they somewhat consented. He went abroad, lived with Mr Wesley, served under him as a son in the gospel, did much good, and endured great hardships for the sake of Jesus Christ. Behold, how God rewarded him for leaving all. Whilst he was absent, God was pleased to make use of the ministry of Mr Ingham, and Mr Charles Wesley, in converting his mother, two sisters, and this young gentleman before-mentioned at Cambridge, who, I pray God, may stand as a barrier against the profaneness, debauchery, lukewarmness, and deism of that seat of learning, and prove both a Barnabas and Bonenergos in the church of England! But to return—After having spent some comfortable hours together, we went to Wimbish-green, where Mr Charles Wesley had preached some time ago. I rode thither in a chaise, and preached from it to about four hundred people, with great freedom and power. About nine we returned to Broad-oaks, and spent the most heavenly night I have known for a long while. Oh! how doubly sweet are opportunities when we have been debarred of them for some time! I believe the saints of old had never so much comfort, as when they were obliged to shut the doors for fear of the Jews, and to hide themselves in dens and caves of the earth. The Lord prepare us all for such an hour.

SAFFRON-WALDEN.

Thursday, June 21. Was much refreshed by last night's rest. Preached at Saffron-Walden, eight miles from Broad-oaks, to about two thousand people: dined with my friends at Mr F—r's. Preached at five in the evening to a like congregation as before, and returned to Broad-oaks, singing and praising God. Wherever I go, people fly to the doctrine of Jesus Christ, as the doves to the windows. My sheep, says our Lord, hear my voice. A stranger will they not hear.

THAXTED, AND BISHOP-STORTFORD.

Friday, June 22. Read part of Jenks's "Submission to the Righteousness of Christ," a most excellent book. Preached at nine in the morning at Thaxted, about two miles from Broad-oaks, to upwards of one thousand

people, but with such sweetness and power, as I have not felt since I came into Essex. All around me were melted into tears. My own heart was so filled with love, that I think I could then have laid down my life for their sakes. After sermon, Mr S—g kindly entertained me, and my fellow-travellers, and many others that came to hear me. We spent our time most christianly together, and afterwards went to Bishop-Stortford, about twelve miles from Thaxted, where I promised, God willing, to preach as to-night. About five we got thither, and at six, God enabled me to preach with power to near four thousand people. Many devout souls were present, and several invitations were given me in the name of Christ to other parts of Essex, which I promised to do, supposing the embargo on the shipping continued. Blessed be God, this itinerant preaching brings me acquainted with numbers of his children, which otherwise I might never have seen or heard of in this life. The united fervent prayers of so many righteous souls, undoubtedly will avail much in my behalf! Lord, was ever love like thine!

BLACKHEATH.

Saturday, June 23. Set out betimes from Bishop-Stortford, and reached Blackheath about three in the afternoon. Preached at seven in the evening to about one thousand people. The smallness of the congregation was occasioned by a report that I was dead. Wherever I came I found the people much surprised and rejoiced to see me alive. God knows I long to be dissolved and to be with Christ, but as I have scarce begun my testimony, I believe I shall not yet die, but live, and declare the works of the Lord. Hereafter I hope he will enable me to say, I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith. Henceforth there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous judge, shall give me at that day, and not to me only, but unto all them also that love his appearing.

BEXLEY.

Sunday, June 24. Read prayers, assisted in ad-

ministering the sacrament at Bexley church. Many came from far, and expected to hear me, but the diocesan had been pleased to insist on the vicar's denying me the pulpit; whether for just cause God shall judge at the last day. If we have done any thing worthy the censures of the church, why do not the right reverend the bishops call us to a public account? If not, why do they not confess and own us? It is well we can appeal to the great bishop of souls. They say, it is not regular our going out into the highways and hedges, and compelling poor sinners to come in. We ought not so to beseech them to be reconciled to God. They desire to know by what authority we preach, and ask, what sign showest thou that thou doest these things? But, alas! what farther sign would they require? We went not into the fields till we were excluded the churches: and has not God set his zeal to our ministry in an extraordinary manner? Have not many that were spiritually blind received their sight? Many that have been lame strengthened to run the way of God's commandments? Have not the deaf heard? the lepers been cleansed? the dead raised? and the poor had the gospel preached unto them? That these notable miracles have been wrought, not in our own names, or by our own power, but in the name and by the power of Jesus of Nazareth, cannot be denied. And yet they require a sign? But verily there shall no other sign be given to this evil and adulterous generation!

Preached in the afternoon to about three hundred people in justice Delamot's yard, and in the evening on Blackheath, to upwards of twenty thousand, on these words, "And they cast him out." I recommended to the people the example of the blind beggar, reminded them of preparing for the gathering storm, and exhorted them in the name of Christ Jesus to follow the example of this meek lamb of God, supposing my enemies should think that they did God good service to kill me. I dread nothing more than the false zeal of my friends in a suffering hour. God grant we may

learn when we are reviled, not to revile again ; when we suffer may we threaten not ; but commit our souls into the hands of him that judgeth righteously. Lord, endue us with the spirit of thy first martyr, St Stephen, that we may pray most earnestly even for our very murderers !

LONDON.

Monday and Tuesday, June 24, 25. Came hither privately last night. Went to a love feast in Fetter-lane, and intended setting out the next morning, being greatly importuned thereto, for Gloucester in the stage coach, but there were no vacant places. Spent the day in writing letters, and settling some affairs. Preached in the evening to about as many as usual at Kennington-common, with great and visible success. Spent a delightful hour with many christian friends. Took coach about eleven at night, and reached Cirencester by ten the next evening. Justly may I say, I am a stranger and pilgrim upon earth : for I have here no continuing city. May I always be preparing myself for that which is to come, a city not made with hands, eternal in the heavens, whose builder and maker is God !

CIRENCESTER AND GLOUCESTER.

Wednesday, June 26. Waited on the minister of the parish, and asked him for the use of his pulpit, but he refused it, because I had not my letters of orders. Went to public worship at eleven, and preached to about three thousand people in a field near the town about twelve. Was afterwards visited by several gracious souls of the baptists' congregation, who brought me five guineas for the orphan-house ; set out about four in the afternoon, and reached Gloucester about seven in the evening, to the inexpressible joy of many. The late report of my being dead has only served to make my present visit more welcome. Thus all things work together for good to those that love God. Soon after I came into town, I visited the society, and expounded for the space of an hour to more people than the room (though it was large) would contain. Blessed be God, all heard the word most gladly. I now see the

seed sown when I was here last, was not all sown on stony, thorny ground: no, some has been received into honest and good hearts. This is the Lord's doing—to him be all the glory through Jesus Christ.

GLOUCESTER.

Thursday, June 27. Preached in the morning to about one thousand people in my brother's field. Went to public prayers at the cathedral. Waited upon the bishop, who received me very civilly. Visited some sick persons in the afternoon who sent for me. Preached at night to upwards of three thousand. God was pleased to give me uncommon freedom and liberty in speaking. Much power from above was amongst us. Great numbers were melted into tears, and most, I believe, went convicted away. Thanks be to God, who thus giveth us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ.

GLOUCESTER AND PAINSWICK.

Friday, June 29. Preached in my brother's field in the morning to a very large and very affected congregation, went to the cathedral service, visited some religious friends, and preached, at the earnest invitation of many who had heard me before, to above three thousand souls in Painswick-street. All was hushed and silent. The Divine Presence was amongst us. Many children of God were fed with the sincere milk of the word. All rejoiced to see me alive again, and thanked God abundantly in my behalf. It well becometh the righteous to be thankful.

STROUD AND GLOUCESTER.

Saturday, June 30. Spent the evening with some christian friends, lay at Painswick, and preached about ten in the morning to near two thousand people, in the bowling-green belonging to the George-inn, in Stroud, three miles from thence. God was with us. After sermon I went in company with many friends to Gloucester, where I preached at seven in the evening to a larger and more affected congregation than ever. Blessed be God, the word has free course. Oh! that it may run and be glorified through all the earth.

GLOUCESTER, RANDWICK, AND HAMPTON COMMON.

Sunday, July 1. Preached at seven in the morning to a much increased audience in my brother's field. Breakfasted at Gloucester, and preached at eleven in the morning, read prayers in the afternoon, and preached again in the afternoon at Randwick church, about seven miles from Gloucester. The church was quite full, about two thousand were in the churchyard, who, by taking down the window that lay behind the pulpit, had the conveniency of hearing. Many wept sorely.

After evening service I hastened to Hampton-common, and to my great surprise, found no less than twenty thousand on horseback and foot ready to hear me. New strength was imparted to me from above. I spoke with greater freedom than I had done all the day before. About twelve at night I reached Gloucester much fresher than when I left it in the morning. Surely Jesus Christ is a gracious master. They that wait upon him shall renew their strength.

Monday, July 2. Preached this morning in my brother's field to a larger audience than ever. Found my spirits much exhausted by yesterday's labours, but notwithstanding a sweet power was amongst us. After dinner I went to Tewksbury, where I found much opposition had been made by the bailiff against my coming. Upon my entrance into the town, I found the people much alarmed, and as soon as I was got into the inn, four constables came to attend me. But a lawyer being there who was my friend, he demanded the constable's warrant, who being not able to produce one, he sent them about their business. At eight o'clock I went into a field lent me by one Mr H—ds, which lay without the liberties of the town. My audience consisted of two or three thousand people. I spoke with freedom, and most, as I afterwards heard, went satisfied and affected away. The remainder of the evening I spent most agreeably with many christian friends who accompanied me on my journey. I perceived a fresh supply of spirits to be given me from

above, and rejoiced that God led me on from conquering to conquer.

TEWKSBURY AND EVESHAM.

Tuesday, July 3. Waited this morning upon Mr J—s, one of the town-bailiffs, and asked him in meekness, "For what reason he sent the constables after me?" He said, "It was the determination not of himself, but of all the council." He then said, "The people were noisy, and reflected upon the bailiffs." I answered, "That was owing to their sending the constables with their staves to apprehend me, when I should come into town." Upon this he began to be a little angry, and told me, "A certain judge said, he would take me up as a vagrant was I to preach near him." I answered, "He was very welcome to do as he pleased; but I apprehended no magistrate had power to stop my preaching even in the streets if I thought proper." "No, sir," says he, "if you preach here to-morrow, you shall have the constables to attend you." After this I took my leave, telling him, "I thought it my duty as a minister to inform him, that magistrates were intended to be a terror to evil doers, and not to those who do well. And I desired he would be as careful to appoint constables to attend at the next horse-race, balls, and assemblies, &c."

About nine in the morning we left Tewksbury, and reached Evesham about noon. The poor people were much alarmed, hearing I had been abused at Tewksbury; and the magistrates of Evesham had threatened to apprehend me if I preached within their liberties. Upon this, Mr Benjamin Seward thought it advisable to preach near his house, which I did from a wall, to near one thousand hearers, and, I believe, to good effect. At my return to the inn, I could not but observe to my friends how gradually the opposition increased. At present it seems to be like the cloud which Elijah's servant saw. No bigger than a man's hand; but, by and by, it will gather apace, and break upon the church of God. But the God whom we serve is able to deliver us.

About eight at night I preached again from the same place, but had the satisfaction of seeing my congregation trebly increased. After this I went to a friend's house to eat bread, and came to my inn, wishing that all felt the love of God shed abroad in their hearts as I did then.

Evesham, Pershore, Tewksbury, and Gloucester.

Wednesday, July 4. Preached by seven in the morning at Evesham, and perceived the people's hearts most nearly knit to me. Breakfasted at a hospitable quaker's house, and went in company with about thirty to Pershore, where I was kindly invited by Mr Parks, the present incumbent. He gave me the meeting as I was going to the church; I read prayers, and preached with power. Several clergymen were present, and after sermon Mr Parks sent me his thanks, and gave me another invitation to Pershore. The inhabitants were much affected, and I was received gladly into some of their houses, and requested to come to others. —About five in the evening I took an affectionate leave of Evesham friends, and in company with about one hundred and twenty on horseback went to Tewksbury, and never saw a town so much alarmed. The streets were crowded with people from all parts. I rode immediately through the town, preached to about six thousand hearers in a field lent us by Mr P—, but saw no constables that came either to molest or attend on me. My hour is not yet come. By and by it will be given me not only to believe on, but to suffer for Christ's name sake. Lord grant I may not deny him in any wise.

Immediately after sermon I took horse, and reached Gloucester near midnight. The weather was very pleasant. God was pleased to refresh me with fresh communications from himself, and we went on our way rejoicing in the Lord, who still causes us to triumph in every place. Oh, for ever adored be his free grace in Christ!

Gloucester and Chefford.

Thursday, July 5. Preached about ten in the morn-

ing, as usual, to a numerous and exceedingly affected audience. My own heart was full of love to my dear countrymen, and they sincerely sympathized with me. Many friends after this came to take leave of me, and told me what God had done for their souls. Having wrote my journal, and despatched my private business, after joining in prayer, and singing with many, I left Gloucester. About five in the evening I reached Chefford-common, at seven preached till it was near dark to upwards of ten thousand people. A glorious increase since I was there last. Blessed be the Lord God of Israel, who delighteth in the prosperity of his servant.

BRISTOL.

Friday, July 6. Lay at the house of Mr. Wa—n, a clothier, two miles from Chefford. Rose at six, after family duty, and taking a little breakfast, we set forwards towards Bristol. At Petty France some friends met us, afterwards more joined us, and before we came within two miles of Bristol, our company increased very considerably. The people were much rejoiced at the news of my coming: their hearts seemed to leap for joy, and many thanksgivings were rendered to God in my behalf. The bells rang unknown to me. I was received as an angel of God. At seven in the evening I preached at Baptist-mills to about six or seven thousand people, who were much melted by the power of God's word. I hope they will receive a second benefit.

Saturday, July 7. Breakfasted with Mr. L—y. Settled some affairs concerning our brethren, and had a useful conference about many things with my honoured friend Mr John Wesley. Dined at my sister's, gave the sacrament to a sick sister, paid another visit upon a matter of importance. Preached at Baptist-mills to near the same number of people as last night, and found that Bristol had great reason to bless God for the ministry of Mr John Wesley. The congregation I observed to be much more serious and affected than when I left them: and their loud and repeated amens, which they put up to every petition, as well as the exemplariness of their conversation in common

life, plainly show that they have not received the grace of God in vain. Ye hypocrites, ye can discern the face of the sky; but how is it that you cannot discern the sign of these times? That good, great good is done, is evident; either this is done by an evil or good spirit: if you say by an evil spirit, I answer in our Lord's own words, "If Satan be divided against Satan, how can his kingdom stand?" If by a good spirit, why do not the clergy and the rest of the Pharisees believe our report? What is it, but little less than blasphemy against the Holy Ghost, to impute the great work that has been in so short a time wrought in this kingdom, to delusion and the power of the devil?

Sunday, July 8. Preached at the Bowling-green to about ten thousand people; greatly affected indeed. About eleven I preached again at Hannam-mount to near as many hearers, and at seven in the evening to about twenty thousand at Rose-green. My power I find much increased since I was here last. And such a visible alteration in the congregation for the better, therein convinces me more and more that God is with us of a truth. As our opposition increases, I doubt not but the manifestations of God's presence amongst us will increase also.

Monday, July 9. On Thursday I received a letter from the bishop of Gloucester, in which his lordship affectionately admonished me to exercise my authority I received, in the manner it was given me. His lordship being of opinion that I ought to preach the gospel only in the congregation wherein I was lawfully appointed thereunto.

To-day I sent his lordship the following answer:—

THE ANSWER.

My lord,—I thank your lordship for your lordship's kind letter. My frequent removes from place to place prevented my answering it sooner. I am greatly obliged to your lordship, in that you are pleased to watch over my soul, and to caution me against acting contrary to the commission given me at ordination. But if the commission we then receive, obliges us to preach

no where but in that parish which is committed to our care, then all persons act contrary to their commission when they preach occasionally in any strange place; and, consequently, your lordship equally offends when you preach out of your own diocese. As for inveighing against the clergy, without cause, I deny the charge. What I say, I am ready to make good whenever your lordship pleases. Let those that bring reports to your lordship about my preaching, be brought face to face, and I am ready to give them an answer. St Paul exhorts Timothy not to receive an accusation against an elder under two or three witnesses. And even Nicodemus could say, "the law suffered no man to be condemned unheard." I shall only add, that I hope your lordship will inspect into the lives of your other clergy, and censure them for being over remiss, as much as you censure me for being over righteous. It is their falling from their articles, and not preaching the truth as it is in Jesus, that has excited the present zeal of (whom they in derision call) the methodist preachers. Dr. Stebbing's sermon (for which I thank your lordship) confirms me more and more in my opinion, that I ought to be instant in season, and out of season. For to me, he seems to know no more of the true nature of regeneration than Nicodemus did when he came to Jesus by night. Your lordship may observe, that he does not speak a word of original sin, or the dreadful consequences of our fall in Adam, upon which the doctrine of the new birth is entirely founded. No; like other polite preachers, he seems to think, in the very beginning of his discourse, that St Paul's description of the wickedness of the heathen is only to be referred to them of past ages. Whereas I affirm we are all included as much under the guilt and consequence of sin as they were, and if any man preach any other doctrine he shall bear his punishment whosoever he be. Again, my lord, the doctor entirely mistakes us when we talk of the sensible operations of the Holy Ghost. He understands us just as those carnal Jews understood Jesus Christ, who, when our Lord talked of giving

them that bread which came down from heaven, said, "How can this man give us his flesh to eat?" Indeed, I know not that we do use the word sensible, when we are talking of the operations of the Spirit of God. But if we do, we do not mean that God's Spirit does manifest itself to our senses, but that it may be perceived by the soul, as really as is any sensible impression made upon the body. But to disprove this, the doctor brings our Lord's allusion to the wind in the third of St John, which is one of the best texts he could urge to prove it. For if the analogy of our Lord's discourse be carried on we shall find it amounts to thus much:—That although the operations of the Spirit of God can no longer be accounted for than how the wind cometh, and whither it goeth; yet may they be as easily felt by the soul, as the wind may be felt by the body. My lord, indeed we speak what we know. "But," says the doctor, "these men have no proof to offer for their inward manifestations." What proof, my lord, does the doctor require? Would he have us raise dead bodies? Have we not done greater things than these? I speak with all humility, has not God by our ministry raised many dead souls to a spiritual life? Verily, if men will not believe the evidence God has given that he sent us, neither would they believe though one rose from the dead. Besides, my lord, the doctor charges us with things we are entire strangers to, such as the denying men the use of God's creatures. Encouraging abstinence, prayer, &c. to the neglect of the duties of our stations. Lord, lay not this sin to his charge. Again, he says, "I suppose Mr Benjamin Seward to be a person believing in Christ, and blameless in his conversation, before what I call his conversion." But this is a direct untruth. For it was through the want of a living faith in Jesus Christ, which he now has, that he was not a Christian before, but a mere moralist. Your lordship knows that our article says, "Works done without the Spirit of God, and true faith in Jesus Christ, have the nature of sin." And such were all the works done by Mr Benjamin Seward before the time men-

tioned in my "Journal." Again, my lord, the doctor represents that as my opinion concerning quakers in general, which I only meant of those I conversed with in particular. But the doctor, and the rest of my reverend brethren, are welcome to judge me as they please. Yet a little while, and we shall all appear before the great Shepherd of our souls. There, there, my lord, shall it be determined who are his true ministers, and and who are only wolves in sheep's clothing. Our Lord, I believe, will not be ashamed to confess us publicly in that day. I pray God we all may approve ourselves such faithful ministers of the New Testament, that we may be able to lift up our heads with boldness. As for declining the work in which I am engaged, my blood runs chill at the very thoughts of it. I am as much convinced it is my duty to act as I do, as that the sun shines at noon-day. I can foresee the consequences very well. They have already in one sense thrust us out of the synagogues. By and by they will think it is doing God service to kill us. But, my lord, if you and the rest of the bishops cast us out, our great and common Master will take us up. Though all men should deny us, yet will not he. And, however you may censure us as evil doers, and disturbers of the peace, yet if we do suffer for our present way of acting, your lordship at the great day will find, that we suffer only for righteousness' sake. In patience therefore do I possess my soul. I willingly tarry the Lord's leisure. In the mean while I shall continually bear your lordship's favours upon my heart, and endeavour to behave, so as to subscribe myself,

My lord,

Your lordship's obedient son,

And obliged servant,

George Whitefield.

Tuesday, July 10. Preached yesterday evening at the brick-yard to about eight thousand people. Dined to-day with my honoured fellow labourer, Mr Wesley, and many other friends at Two-mill-hill, in Kingswood, and preached afterwards to several thousand people, and colliers, in the school-house, which has been

carried on so successfully, that the roof is ready to be put up. The design I think is good. Old as well as young are to be instructed. A great and a visible alteration is made in the behaviour of the colliers. Instead of cursing and swearing, they are heard to sing hymns about the woods; and the rising generation, I hope, will be a generation of christians. They seem much affected by the word. They melt into tears, and are observed to attend the churches and societies when Mr Wesley is absent from them. The prospect of their future welfare filled me with joy unspeakable. They took a most affectionate leave of me. Lord, put thou their tears into thy bottle!

Went immediately after sermon was ended with Mr Wesley, and several other friends, to Bath, and preached there to about three thousand people at seven in the evening. It rained a little all the while, but the people were very patient and attentive, and I never had such power given me to speak to the polite scoffers before. Oh, that the scales were removed from the eyes of their minds!

Heard to-day the town-clerk of Bristol did my brother Wesley and me the honour, to desire the grand-jury, at their quarter-sessions, to present our meetings, and to have the riot-act read, but they did not regard him. Nay one, that was called to serve on the petty jury, offered to submit to any fine, rather than do any thing against us; who, he said, were the true servants of Jesus Christ. May he meet with that reward which our Lord has promised to all those that shall confess him before men! The hour of persecution is not yet come. These are some distant proofs of it. I really wonder it comes on no faster. Satan, why sleepest thou?

BATH AND BRISTOL.

Wednesday, July 11. Preached at eleven in the morning to a larger audience than last night, and almost with equal power. Hastened to Bristol, and preached in the evening at Baptist-mills to a large congregation. It rained much. But, blessed be God, the people's hearts are so far influenced by the gospel of

Christ, that they care but little whether it rains or shines.

After this, my brother Wesley and I went to the women and men's societies, settled some affairs, and united the two leading societies together. A great harmony and sweetness of soul were amongst us all. My heart was full of love for them, and they wept most sorely at my farewell-exhortation and prayer. How can I be thankful enough to God, for sending me hither to see that the seed has been sown in good ground, and that by the ministry of Mr Wesley it has received great increase. May it still increase with all the increase of God.

Thursday, July 12. Was busied most of the day in fitting a sermon for the press, "On the Indwelling of the Spirit," which I would recommend to all. Preached in the evening to eight or nine thousand people in the Bowling-green, with great freedom and power, and afterwards spent an hour most delightfully with some christian friends. Blessed be God for the communion of saints! Oh! when shall I be translated to the communion of the spirits of just men made perfect! As the hart panteth after the water brooks, so doth my soul long after that perfect fellowship with the sons of God!

Friday, July 13. Preached my farewell sermon at seven in the morning to a weeping and deeply affected audience. My heart was full, and I continued near two hours in prayer and preaching. The poor people shed many tears, and sent up thousands of prayers in my behalf, and would scarce let me go away. Their mites they most cheerfully contributed to the school-house at Kingswood, and proved, I think, to a demonstration, that they had not received the word of God in vain. Blessed be God for seeing this increase of his mercy. Blessed be God for my coming hither to behold some fruits of my labours. Many souls have been strengthened and comforted, many convinced of sin, and myself also more established and strong in the Lord. As oppositions abound, so do my consolations

much more abound ! Who is so good a master as Jesus Christ ?

Retired after sermon to vent my heart, which was ready to burst with a sense of God's especial, distinguishing, repeated mercies. Dined with and took a most affectionate leave of a whole roomful of weeping friends. Set out about four o'clock, and reached Thornbury about eight in the evening. It raining exceeding hard most part of the day, there were but few country people. However, I preached to about six hundred from a table in the street. I hope God gave it his blessing.

THORNBURY AND GLOUCESTER.

Saturday, July 14. Preached at eight this morning to an attentive congregation. Breakfasted at a quaker's, and reached Gloucester with my honoured friend, Mr John Wesley, and some others, by three in the afternoon. Went to the cathedral prayers, dined, and afterwards preached to a congregation a third part larger than I have had in this place before. Blessed be God wherever I go, I find my audiences are always more numerous by far at the last than at the first. Lord, make me truly humble and thankful !

Sunday, July 15. Left my honoured friend, Mr Wesley, to preach to about seven thousand souls in Gloucester. And had the pleasure afterwards of hearing that the people heard him gladly. Preached twice in Randwick church, and assisted in administering the sacrament to two hundred and seventy communicants. The congregations were larger than when I preached last. My body being weak, and God being pleased to withdraw himself, I spoke with very little power in the morning ; but in the afternoon, God caused my strength to return again, and I preached with much freedom and power in the evening ; and at Hampton-common, I was enabled to lift up my voice like a trumpet, and to preach to about twenty thousand souls ; all which behaved with great reverence and devotion. After I had done I received fresh invitations to different places, which I proposed to comply with, if the Lord should permit.

Never did I see people more eager after the milk of the word. Their souls were much rejoiced when I told them Mr John Wesley intended to come after to feed them. Lord, grant he may be preferred before me wherever he goes !

Monday, July 16. Lay last night at the house of Mr E—s, of Ebly, and had a most comfortable time of it. Went to Tedbury, about six miles from thence, having been earnestly invited several times, and preached at noon to about four thousand people. Many gracious souls of divers denominations came to meet me, with whom I took sweet counsel. The scoffers, before I came, had threatened to do something. But the power of God's word overcame them. Visited in the afternoon Mr O—, a baptist-teacher, and went afterwards, in company with several friends, to Malmsbury, in Wiltshire, about three miles from Tedbury, whither I had been invited by a letter, signed by fifty-two persons. At seven I preached to about three thousand people, who, I believe, felt the power of God's word. Much opposition had been made by the Pharisees against my coming. And the minister in particular had wrote to the churchwarden to stop me ; but he was more noble. Numbers, as I heard afterwards, who were vastly prejudiced against me by lying reports, went away convinced that I spoke the words of truth and soberness. Thou shalt answer for me, O Lord my God.

Tuesday, July 17. Lay with my fellow-travellers at the house of Mr Line, who most gladly received us for our Master's sake. I had a thorn in the flesh sent to buffet me, was weak in body, deserted in mind, and felt myself to be, what I often say we are all by nature, half a devil, and half a beast. With great inward reluctance I rose, and preached to about two thousand souls at eight in the morning ; then I retired to my bed again, with an unspeakable pressure upon my heart till noon. Was something better after dinner, and much revived to see what an effectual door was like to be opened in Wiltshire for preaching the gospel. Went

and paid my respects to the chief magistrate who was my friend, and reached Cirencester about six in the evening.

Here also men breathed out threatenings against me, but were not empowered to put them into execution. Numbers came from neighbouring towns. My congregation was as large again as when I preached here last. God enabled me, weak as I was, to speak boldly as I ought to speak. Every thing was carried on with decency and order, and my inward comforts began to return again. God will not always be chiding, neither keepeth he his anger for ever. How heavily do I drive when God takes off my chariot wheels. O that I may learn to be meek and lowly in my own eyes. Lord give me humility, or I perish.

CIRENCESTER AND ABINGDON.

Wednesday, July 18. Found more than ever the truth of the wise man's saying, Woe be to him that is alone, for when he falleth he hath not another to lift him up. Breakfasted with one Mr H—r, and preached at seven in the morning to about as numerous a congregation, but with much greater spirits than last night. The place where I preached was exceeding convenient. I stood in the valley, and the people on an ascent that formed a most beautiful amphitheatre. After I had done, God gave me some most extraordinary instances of the power of his word. Lord, not unto me, but unto thy name be all the glory.

Left Cirencester about eleven, dined at Leatchlade, where the inhabitants were very importunate to hear me, would time have permitted. I reached Abingdon, twenty-two miles from Cirencester, about seven, and preached to several thousands soon after I came in. Much opposition had been made against my coming. The landlord, whose house we offered to put up at, genteelly told us, he had not room for us; and numberless prejudices had been industriously spread to prevent my success. But God strengthened me after my journey, and enabled me to speak, I trust, to the hearts of many. God's word will make its own way,

let men say what they please. Our weapons are not carnal, but mighty through the divine power, to the pulling down Satan's strong holds.

ABINGDON AND BASINGSTOKE.

Thursday, July 19. At the request of several well-disposed people, preached again this morning, though not to so great a number as before. A sweet power was amongst us. The hearers melted into tears under the word. My heart was full of love, and theirs also were much affected. Oh! what a sudden alteration does this foolishness of preaching make in the most obstinate hearts! 'Tis but for God to speak the word, and the lion is turned into a lamb. Oh! that we were like that dear lamb of God, who died to take away the sins of the world!

Breakfasted with Mr F—r, who, with many other friends, expressed great tokens of friendship for me and my fellow-travellers. Set out at eleven, dined at Ilsly, and reached Basingstoke about seven at night. Perceiving myself languid and weary, I lay down upon the bed soon after coming into the inn, but was soon refreshed with the news, that the landlord, one of whose children was wrought upon when I was there last, would not let us stay under his roof; upon which I immediately rose and went to another inn; but the people made a mock of both me and my friends as we passed along, and shot out their arrows, even bitter words against us, and fire-rockets were thrown around the door. It was now near eight o'clock, and too late to preach; I therefore retired from my friends, gave God thanks for accounting me worthy to suffer reproach for his name's sake, and about an hour after received the following letter by the hands of the constable from Mr Mayor:—

“ Sir,

“ Being a civil magistrate in this town, I thought it my duty, for the preservation of the peace, to forbid you, or at least dissuade you, from preaching here. If you persist in it, in all probability, it may occasion a disturbance, which I think is your duty, as a clergy-

man, as well as mine, to prevent. If any mischief should ensue (whatever pretence you may afterwards make in your behalf) I am satisfied it will fall on your own head, being timely cautioned by me; who am, Sir,

“Your most humble servant,

“Basingstoke, July 19, 1739.” “John Abbot.”

“P.S. The legislature has wisely made laws for the preservation of the peace, therefore I hope no clergyman lives in defiance of them.”

To this I immediately sent the following answer:—

“Honoured Sir,

“I thank you for your kind letter, and I humbly hope a sense of your duty, and not a fear of man, caused you to write it. If so, give me leave to remind you, honoured sir, as a clergyman, you ought to be a terror to evil doers, but a praise to them that do well. I know of no law against such meetings as mine. If any such law be existing, I believe you will think it your duty, honoured sir, to apprise me of it, that I may not offend against it. If no law can be produced, as a clergyman I think it my duty to inform you, that you ought to protect, and not any ways to discourage, or permit others to disturb an assembly of people meeting together purely to worship God. To-morrow, honoured sir, I hear, there is to be an assembly of another nature: be pleased to be as careful to have the public peace preserved at that, and to prevent profane cursing and swearing, and persons breaking the sixth commandment, by bruising each other's bodies by cudgelling and wrestling; and if you do not this, I shall rise up against you at the great day, and be a swift witness against your partiality. I am,

“Honoured Sir,

“Your very humble servant,

“George Whitefield.”

Friday, July 23. After breakfast waited in person upon Mr. Mayor, to see what law could be produced against my meetings. As soon as I began to talk with him, I perceived he was a little angry; and said, “Sir,

you sneered me in the letter you sent last night. Though I am a butcher, yet sir," says he, "I—" I replied, I honoured him as a magistrate, and only desired to know what law could be produced against my preaching: in my opinion there could be none, because there was never any such thing as field-preaching before. I then instanced the trial of P., the quaker, where the jury, notwithstanding they were so hardly used, brought a verdict in favour of him. "Sir," says he, "you ought to preach in a church." "And so I would," replied I, "if your minister would give me leave." "Sir," said he, "I believe you have some sinister ends in view—why do you go about making a disturbance?" I answered, "I make no disturbance; and it was hard I could not come into town without being insulted. It was your business, sir," said I, "to wait, and if there was any riot in my meetings, then, and not till then, it is your duty to interpose." "Then," said he, "sir, you wrote to me about the revel to-day: I have declared against it." "But," said I, "sir, you ought to go and read the riot-act, and put an entire stop to it." I then pressed him to show me a law against meetings; urging, if there had been any law, they would have been stopped long since. He answered, "It was an odd way of preaching. But, sir," says he, "I must go away to a fair. Before you came I had wrote you another letter, which I will send you if you please." Upon this I thanked him, paid him the respect due to a magistrate, and took my leave. Soon after I was returned to my company, he sent me the following letter:—

"Rev. Sir,

"Basingstoke, July 20, 1730.

"I received your extraordinary letter, and could expect no other from so uncommon a genius.

"I apprehend your meetings to be unlawful, having no toleration to protect you in it. My apprehension of religion always was, and I hope always will be, that God is to be worshipped in places consecrated, and set apart for his service, and not in brothels, and places where all manner of debauchery may have been com-

mitted ; but how far this is consistent with your actions, I leave you to judge.

“ As for the other assembly you are pleased to mention, it is contrary to my will, having never given my consent to it, nor approved of it, but discouraged it before your reverendship came to this town ; and if these cudgellers persist in it, I shall set them upon the same level with you, and think you all breakers of the public peace. You very well know there are penal laws against cursing and swearing, and I could wish there were the same against deceit and hypocrisy. Your appearing against me as a swift witness, at the day of judgment, I must own, is a terrible thing, and may serve as a bugbear for children, or people of weak minds ; but believe me, reverend sir, those disguises will have but little weight amongst men of common understanding. “ Yours,

“ John Abbot.”

“ I told you I had a letter wrote, I made bold to send it.”

To this I sent the following answer :—

“ Honoured Sir,

“ Does Mr Mayor do well to be angry ? Alas, what evil have I done ? I honour you as a magistrate ; but as a minister I am obliged to have no respect of persons. Your apprehending my meetings to be unlawful, does not make them to be so. There’s no need of toleration to protect me, when I do not act unconformable to any law, civil or ecclesiastical. Be pleased to prove that my meetings are schismatical, seditious, or riotous, and then I will submit. But you say they are upon unconsecrated ground. Honoured sir, give me leave to inform you, that God is not now confined to places, but seeketh such to worship him, who worship him in spirit and in truth ; and where two or three are gathered together in Christ’s name, there will Christ be in the midst of them. The church, by our ministers in their prayer before their sermons is defined not to be the church-walls, but a congregation of christian people, such is mine. As for judging me—to my own Master

I stand or fall ; at his dreadful tribunal I will meet you, and then you shall see what is in the heart of,

“Honoured Sir,

“Your very humble servant,

“George Whitefield.”

“Basingstoke, July 20, 1739.”

About 8 o'clock I went into a field, lent me by Mr H—n; and though one said, I should not go alive out of Basingstoke if I preached there, and another said, the drum should beat just by me, yet I had little or no interruption, and God gave me such great power in speaking against revelling, and those few scoffers that were there, that they were not able to gainsay or resist it. As I came from the field, passing through the church-yard, the boys, headed by some of the baser sort, saluted me as before, called me strange names, which, I trust, was received in the spirit of our dear Master.

After this I prayed and sung psalms at the inn with some few disciples and then took my leave.—As I passed by on horseback, I saw a stage built for the cudgellers and wrestlers; and as I rode farther, I met divers coming to the revel, which affected me so much, that I had no rest in my spirit. And therefore having asked counsel of God, and perceiving an unusual power and warmth enter into my soul, though I was gone above a mile from the town, I could not bear to see so many dear souls, for whom Christ died, ready to perish, and no minister or magistrate interpose. Upon this I told my dear fellow-travellers that I was resolved to follow the example of Howel Harris in Wales, and to bear my testimony against such lying vanities, let the consequences, as to my own private person, be what they would.—They immediately consenting, I rode back to the town, got upon the stage erected for the wrestlers, and began to show them the error of their ways.—Many seemed ready to hear what I had to say, but one more zealous for his master than the rest, and fearing conviction every time I so much as attempted to speak, set the boys upon repeating their huzzas—my soul, I

perceived, was in a sweet frame, willing to be offered up, so that I might save some of those to whom I was about to speak ; but all in vain. While I was on the stage, one struck me with his cudgel, which I received with the utmost love ; till at last finding the devil would not permit them to give me audience, I got off, and after much thronging and pushing me, I mounted my horse with unspeakable satisfaction within myself, that I had now begun to attack the devil in his strongest holds, and had borne my testimony against the detestable diversions of this generation. Ye masters of Israel, what are you doing? Ye magistrates, that are called gods in Scripture, why sleep you? Why do you bear the sword in vain? Why count you me a troubler of Israel, and why say you I teach people to be idle, when you can connive at, if not subscribe to such hellish meetings as these, which not only draw people from their bodily work, but directly tend to destroy their precious and immortal souls ; surely I shall appear against you at the judgment seat of Christ ; for these diversions keep people from true christianity as much as paganism itself. And I doubt not, but it will require as much courage and power, to divert people from these things, as the apostles were obliged to exert in converting the heathen from their dumb idols. However, in the strength of my Master, I will now enter the lists, and begin an offensive war with Satan and all his host. If I perish, I perish. I shall have the testimony of a good conscience, I shall be free from the blood of all men.

From Basingstoke I intended to go to Windsor, but having not sent to any in that place, and longing for a little retirement, I lay at Stains, and spent some hours in sweet fellowship with my dear fellow-travellers. O, what a blessed thing it is for brethren to dwell together in unity!

LONDON.

Saturday, July 21. Set out a little after four in the morning, and reached London by breakfast time.—Set-

ttled my affairs, rejoiced with my dear friends, and preached in the evening to upwards of ten thousand at Kennington-common. The poor souls were ready to leap for joy at my return amongst them; the word sunk deep into their hearts; great numbers melted into tears, and my own heart overflowed with love towards them. Blessed be God for what has been done here, since I left London, by my honoured friend and fellow-labourer, Mr Charles Wesley. Surely, we can see the fruits of our labours.—All love, all glory be to God, for giving so great an increase!

Sunday, July 22. Ever since I was abused at Basingstoke, I have had great communications from God. When men cast us out, then does Jesus Christ chiefly take us up. Who would not be a christian? There is nothing I desire on earth in comparison of that. Received a letter from Mr Ralph Erskine of Scotland. Some may be offended at my corresponding with him, but I dare not but confess my Lord's disciples. Had a pressing invitation to come into Lincolnshire. Blessed be God, the word runs very swiftly. In vain do our adversaries stand against the Most High. Preached at seven in the morning to about twenty thousand at Moorfields. A greater power than ever was amongst us—scoffers and curious persons daily drop off—most that come now, I hope, do not come out of curiosity—never were souls more melted down by the power of God's words—never did people offer their mites more willingly.—I collected twenty-four pounds seventeen shillings for the school-house that is erecting at Kingswood, and all seemed solicitous how to express their affection. Ye scoffers, ye blind pharisees, come and see, and then call these tumultuous, seditious assemblies if you can. Would to God they behaved so decently in any church in London. Went to St Paul's and received the blessed sacrament, and preached in the evening at Kennington-common to about thirty thousand hearers, and collected fifteen pounds fifteen shillings and sixpence for the colliers. God gave me great power, and I never opened my

mouth so freely against the letter-learned clergymen of the church of England. Every day do I see the necessity of speaking out more and more. The most learned of our modern rabbies, I find now, by their writings, and by their conferences with me and my friends, either make our sanctification a cause of, whereas it is the effect of, our justification before God; or they entirely interpret away the meaning of all the doctrines of the Spirit, so as to make regeneration consist only in a desire and good disposition to do the will of God, or, in other words, in an outward decency of life, and a morality falsely so called. This is the sum and substance of the generality of our modern doctrine. And therefore, were I to die immediately for speaking, yet I should not die in peace, unless I bore my testimony against them. God knows my heart, I do not speak out of resentment. I heartily wish all the Lord's servants were prophets. I wish the church of England was the joy of the whole earth. But I cannot see her sinking into papistical ignorance, and deism refined, and not open my mouth against those who, by their sensual, lukewarm lives, and unscriptural, superficial doctrines, thus cause her to err. O Lord, send out, we beseech thee, send out thy light and thy truth. Even so come, Lord Jesus, come quickly!

Monday, July 23. This day I received the following letter from the quaker at Basingstoke, at whose house I lodged.

“ My dear friend, “ Basingstoke, July 21, 1739.

“ When I yesterday went up to thy inn, and found thee just gone, I was sorry that I missed an opportunity, both of taking my leave of thee, and expressing the sense I had of the power and presence of God that was with thee, more especially in the latter part of thy sermon, and in thy prayer after it; however, I am truly glad, that thou wert preserved out of the hands of cruel and unreasonable men. Thou heardest of the threatenings of many; but the malice and blind zeal of some went further. For hadst thou went to my friend H— to bed, or elsewhere towards that part of

the town, which I believe was expected, there were ten or twelve men lying in wait to do thee a private mischief, which I know by the testimony of one of those very men, who boasted to me, we would have given him a secret blow, and prevented his making disturbances. This conversation came out to me in the warmth of his zeal, as thinking, perhaps, that I could hate, at least, if not destroy (like him) all that were not of my own party.

“O thy noble testimony against the profaneness and vanity of the age! It rejoiced me not a little. But when thou camest to the necessity, the nature and the rewards of the new birth, the true seed, thou wert carried beyond thyself, the fountain of life was opened, and flowed around amongst the living. I am, for one, a monument of free grace and mercy. O God, how boundless is thy love! He hath not hid his mercies from me. I have often drank of the spiritual rock, and been a witness of the joys of God's salvation. Ay, those joys, that sweet presence of Christ, that carries men above the fear of the world, and enables them to overcome the world; that baptizeth into the spirit and nature of the Son of God, and maketh disciples indeed. It is a sense of God ever-near the influences of his quickening Spirit, that is only able to deter from evil, crucify the old nature, create again to God, and perform his good and acceptable will. This will make a thorough reformation, beginning at the heart, sanctifying that, guarding of it, and making it a holy temple for the Holy Spirit to dwell in, then producing holy thoughts, longings after divine enjoyments, love, joy, solidity, watchfulness, &c.

“But, why this to thee? Thou hast drunk deep of divine love; only I know that the good experiences of God's children are often causes of mutual comfort. I have often been sensible of it myself, and therefore not only thus privately, but publicly have I been strengthened to tell to others, that God is good, and that he has done great things for my soul. Ministers not thus qualified, and thus sent, may indeed be ministers of

those who sent them, but ministers of Christ they cannot be.

“ May we, my dear friend, though absent in body, be present in spirit in him who is omnipresent. May we unitedly go on in the cause of our common Lord and Master, to promote his honour in winning souls to him ! May we bear a faithful and undaunted testimony to him before all men in the midst of a perverse generation. May we not flinch, but declare the truth as it is in Jesus, not daubing nor daring to make the way to the kingdom of God wider than it is. And may we finally be received up into the mansions of glory, there to live with all the righteous generations, with those that have washed their garments white in the blood of the lamb, and with those that have laid down their lives for the testimony of Jesus, and to sing with them, Hallelujahs, glory and praise, for ever and ever. May the ancient of days, the alpha and omega, keep thee in his arms, direct thee by his Spirit, support, comfort, and watch over thee, is the fervent prayer of, my dear friend, thine in great sincerity, “ J. PORTSMOUTH.”

My friend, Mr William Seward, received also a letter from his brother, in which were the following paragraphs :—

“ I had a letter per last post from Mr — wherein he speaks of one Mr — of Corpus Christi College, whom his uncle, a clergyman, hath entirely discarded, and wrote to the college to expel him for his methodistical notions.

“ The old clerk at Breferton, whom I before spoke of, having heard Mr Whitefield at Badsey, was so affected, that he told me, he could have no rest in his spirit ; but after searching the church-homilies, articles, &c. and finding the doctrine every way agreeable to them, he met with the landlord of Contercup, who, discoursing about Mr Whitefield, told him, he had some old books, that set forth the very same doctrine. Soon after this he went to work, being a tailor by trade, and asking for one of these books, the others being lent out, he said, he had not read above a page or two, before the

truth broke in upon his soul like lightning. He said he could not go on with his work with any satisfaction, but his fingers itched to be at his book again, which the man lent him home with him; a few days after, he got the other, which so strengthened and confirmed him, that he could lay his life down in defence of the truth as it is in Jesus. He says, the gospel appears to him, as though he had never read a line in it before; and it is a greater miracle to him, that he, an old sinner, with one foot in the grave, should be called at these years, than if he had seen the dead raised. He always, by what I can learn, bore a fair character, and was esteemed by his neighbours, but now threatened with the loss of his bread, for coming to Badsey society, and declaring his testimony to the truth of Mr Whitefield's doctrine, or rather, I should say, the doctrine of the gospel. The books he met with are very old, and, he says, were thrown by as waste paper out of a clergyman's library, that was sold after his death, whereby the Contercup man met with them, and they seemed very providentially reserved for his use."

Persons wonder at me, because I talk of persecution, now the world is become christian; but, alas! was Jesus Christ to come down from heaven at this time, he would be treated as formerly. And whoever goes forth to preach the gospel in his spirit, must expect the same treatment as his first apostles met with. Lord, prepare us for all events!

Preached this evening at Hackney-marsh to about two thousand people. I prayed and discoursed for above two hours, and with greater demonstration of the Spirit than ever. Floods of tears were shed by the hearers, and the doctrine seemed to make its own way into their hearts. Every day have I more and more reason to rejoice in what God has done for my own, and others' souls. Thousands at the great day will have reason to bless God for field-preaching. Then our pharisees will believe. But, Lord, grant the veil may be taken from their hearts, and the scales from their

eyes, before that dreadful day ! for then convictions will come too late.

Tuesday, July 24. Despatched my private affairs, and preached in the evening at Kennington-common to about fifteen thousand. The doctrine, I believe, distilled like the dew. May the Lord Jesus water their thirsty souls !

Wednesday, July 25. Preached this evening at Edmonton, at the desire of many. The congregation was large and attentive, and I rejoiced in having an opportunity of offering salvation freely to the rich. Oh, that all in high stations were rich towards God !

Thursday, July 26. Preached to upwards of ten thousand at Hackney-marsh, where I appointed purposely to preach, because there was to be a horse-race in the same field. Blessed be God, I had the pleasure of bearing my testimony against such unchristian entertainments. Very few left the sermon to see the race, and some of those returned back again quickly, to whom I took occasion of speaking with something of the love and simplicity of Christ. To him be all the glory. I think this is a manifest proof of the success of our doctrine. By the help of God, I will still go on to attack the devil in his strongest holds. The common people go to these diversions for want of knowing better. If we can once draw them from these, their minds will be better prepared to receive the gospel. Prosper, O Lord, this work of my hands upon me !

Friday, July 27. Preached at Kennington-common to my usual number of hearers, went to Lewisham, was kindly entertained by Mrs —— and lay at the house of Mr —— both which received me and my friends with joy. Blessed be God for all his mercies.

Saturday, July 28. Spent a comfortable hour with my friends in the morning, went to pay a visit to the family of justice De la Motte at Blendon, where we exhorted and built up each other in the knowledge and fear of God. Preached at Blackheath in the evening, and came home rejoicing that I saw great fruits of my ministry. The bills which are sent to me, plainly

prove, that God has worked on numbers of souls. At the judgment day you shall see, O pharisees, what good has been done by this foolishness of preaching. Many, I believe, come to the fields to worship the Father in spirit and in truth. God seeketh such to worship him.

Sunday, July 29. Preached this morning in Moorfields to a much larger congregation than we had last Sunday, and collected twenty-four pounds nine shillings for the school at Kingswood. Received the sacrament at St Paul's, and preached at Kennington-common in the evening, where twenty pounds was collected. God sent us a little rain, but that only washed away the curious hearers. Near thirty thousand stood their ground, and God, I believe, watered them with the dew of his heavenly blessing. A more visible alteration for the better is made in the people daily, a good work is wrought in the hearts of numbers. It would be endless to recount how many come to me under strong convictions of their lost estate. God has begun, God will carry on the good work in their souls; even so, Lord Jesus!

Monday, July 30. Was busied all the morning in directing those to believe in Jesus Christ, who came asking me, what they should do to be saved? Preached at Plaistow, about six miles from London, and an uncommon power was in the congregation. My own heart was much enlarged, and I returned home much rejoiced within myself that the Lord Jesus was pleased still to manifest himself more and more amongst us.

Tuesday, July 31. Preached at Newington near Hackney, to about twenty thousand people, many of whose hearts, as well as my own, were warmed under the word. I preached upon Genesis iii. 15, and I hope the seed of the woman is now bruising the serpent's head to some purpose. Amen, Lord Jesus, Amen!

Wednesday, August 1. Preached this evening at Marylebone-fields at the other end of the town to near thirty thousand, and went afterwards to take my leave of Fetter-lane society. We parted in love, and

I hope the next time we meet, we shall be in or, at least, nearer heaven. Oh, that we may comfort one another with the prospect of this thing.

Thursday, August 2. Preached at Newington to upwards of twenty thousand people, and came home much rejoicing to see what a great work God has done in this city. Thousands, and I believe tens of thousands, come constantly to hear. Scoffers seem afraid to show their heads, being frequently overpowered by God's word. I hope the time is coming which the prophet speaks of, Behold, ye despisers, and wonder, and perish; for I will work a work in your days, which you shall in nowise believe, though a man declare it unto you.

Friday, August 3. Spent the day in completing my affairs, taking my leave of my dear friends, and preached in the evening to near twenty thousand at Kennington-common. I chose to discourse on St Paul's parting speech to the elders at Ephesus, Acts xx. at which the people were exceedingly affected, and almost prevented my making any application. Many tears were shed, when I talked of leaving them. I concluded all with a suitable hymn, but could scarce get to the coach, for the people's thronging me, to take me by the hand, and give me a parting blessing. And here I cannot but shut up this part of my Journal with a word or two of exhortation to my dear brethren, whosoever they are, whom God shall stir up to go forth into the highways and hedges, into the lanes and streets, to compel poor sinners to come in. You see, my dear brethren, what great things God has already done. It is unknown how many have come to me under strong convictions of their fallen estate, and what numbers of bills I have received from persons seeking Christ, desiring to be awakened to a sense of sin, and giving thanks for the benefits God has imparted to them by my ministry. Letters of invitation have been sent me from different parts of the kingdom. O, my dear brethren, have compassion on our dear Lord's church, which he has purchased with his own blood. Suffer none of them to be as sheep, having no shepherd, or

worse than none, those blind leaders of the blind, who let them perish for lack of knowledge, and are no better than wolves in sheep's clothing. If you are found faithful, you must undergo a strong persecution. A person in power told me, nothing but the fear of strengthening my interest, kept off the storm. But the enmity of the natural man is so great against God, that if the good work which is begun is carried on, it will soon break through all restraints, though thereby our enemies will confound themselves; but the scriptures must be fulfilled. Oh arm people against a suffering time; exhort them always to be obedient to the higher powers; remind them, again and again, that our kingdom is not of this world, and that it does not become christians to resist the powers that are ordained of God, but patiently to suffer for the truth's sake. At present God calls me to trials of a different nature; but I am persuaded, ere long, it will be given me not only to believe, but also to suffer for our Lord's sake. Oh let us strive together in our prayers, that we may fight the good fight of faith, that we may have that wisdom which cometh from above, that we never suffer for our own faults, but only for righteousness' sake. Then will the spirit of Christ and of glory rest upon our souls, and being made perfect by suffering here, we shall be qualified to reign eternally with Jesus Christ hereafter. Amen, Amen!

Eternal universal Lord,
Maker of heav'n and earth art thou.
All things sprang forth t'obey thy word,
Thy pow'rful word upholds them now.

Why then, with unavailing rage,
Did heathen with thy people join,
And impotently fierce engage,
To execute their vain design?

Indignant kings stood up t' oppose
The Lord, and his Messiah's reign;
And earth's confederate rulers rose
Against their God in council vain.

Surely against thy holy Son,
(Son of thy love and sent by thee,
One with th' anointing spirit, one
With thy coequal majesty)

Herod and Pilate both combin'd,
Thy sov'reign purpose to fulfil;
Gentiles and Jews unconscious join'd,
T' accomplish thy eternal will.

And now their idle fury view,
And now behold their threatenings, Lord;
Behold thy faithful servants too,
And strengthen us to speak thy word.

Embolden'd by thine outstretch'd arm,
Fill us with confidence divine,
With heav'nly zeal our bosom warm,
That all may own the work is thine;

May see the tokens of thy hand,
Its sov'reign grace, its healing pow'r;
No more their happiness withstand,
And fight against their God no more.

Now let their opposition cease,
Now let them catch the quick'ning flame,
And forc'd to yield, the signs increase,
The wonders wrought by Jesu's name.

SEQUEL.

THE foregoing journal details the adventures of an enthusiastic divine, from his embarkation for America, in December 1737, to his return to that country in August 1739. It will be seen thereby, that he received priestly ordination from the hands of bishop Benson, at Oxford, on the fourteenth of January in the last-mentioned year, although many of the clergy would at that time scarcely acknowledge him. It is unnecessary to add anything to his own account of his preaching at Bath and Bristol, among the colliers at Kingswood, and in various other places, until he repaired to the metropolis, where, in addition to his labours in the pulpits to which he could gain admission, he addressed immense assemblages in Moorfields, Blackheath, and Kennington-common. Although sometimes insulted and interrupted on these occasions, his singular power of arresting the attention of his large auditories far more usually ensured the necessary decorum.

In August 1739, the period that his journal closes, he embarked a second time for America, with the contributions he had raised for the erection of the orphan-house in Georgia. On his arrival, after a progress through several of the colonies, he reached Savannah, and chose a spot of ground for the orphan-school, the first brick of which was laid on the twenty-fifth of March 1740. He then made a tour through the whole country as far as Boston, preaching as usual with extraordinary earnestness. and such a power of appeal in regard to the charitable object of his mission, that

even the calm and philosophic Franklin found himself unable to resist ; as may be seen by his memoirs, in which he relates several instances of the strong gift of persuasion possessed by Whitefield. Returning to Savannah after this excursion, he found his orphan-family comfortably settled in their new house ; on which he prepared again to embark for England, where he once more arrived on the fourteenth of March 1741.

During this long absence, his popularity, which rested principally on his own popular oratory, had been sensibly declining at home. The Moravians had made inroads upon the society ; and John Wesley had not only preached and printed in favour of perfection and redemption, but had exerted himself still more earnestly against the Calvinistic doctrine of election and reprobation, to which Whitefield was strongly attached. The outward circumstances of the latter were also much embarrassed : and he owed no less a sum than a thousand pounds on account of his orphan-house at Georgia. The formal separation from the Wesleys, which could not now be avoided, also produced a great desertion among his usual auditors ; and it required all his zeal and intrepidity to encounter the numerous difficulties with which he found himself surrounded.

He had been in England but a few months, when being earnestly invited to visit Scotland, he went there by water, and reached Leith in July 1741. He was very cordially received at Dumfermline and Edinburgh, although he had to encounter some prejudices as being a clergyman of the church of England. He was, however, admitted into the churches ; and after encountering the usual admixture of applause and censure, and making a handsome collection for his orphan-house, he departed for Wales. Here he took himself a wife in the person of a widow lady of the name of James, a resident of Abergavenny. Returning to London in the spring of 1742 his enthusiasm led him to engage in a singular contest with the showmen and others who then exhibited at Easter and Whitsuntide in

Moorfields. On Whit Monday in that year, attended by a great number of followers, he made an inroad upon the puppet-show people, and endeavoured, to use his own expression, "to pray them down;" whilst they, on their part, did all in their power to interrupt and annoy him in return. The result was so far in his favour, that he says he received a thousand notes from persons under a conviction of sin, three hundred of whom were admitted into the society in one day. This fact, if correct, forms no bad illustration of the curious nature of the conversions by which the period in question was very signally distinguished.

About this time, the season not allowing him to preach sufficiently often in the open air, some of his friends obtained the loan of a piece of land, whereon they erected a large temporary shed, which they called the Tabernacle. This humble erection was sometime after transformed into a spacious edifice, bearing the same name, which is still maintained for the exertions of his successors in the same connection.

In August 1744, our active enthusiast, although in a weak state of health, embarked a third time for America, and after a tedious passage arrived at New York, where he became so ill that his life was deemed in danger. He however recovered, and resumed his usual course of active itinerant preaching for upwards of three years, when he was recommended to visit the Bermudas for the benefit of his health. He reached those islands in March 1748, and after making the usual impression, and collecting a handsome sum of money for his orphan-house, once more embarked for England.

On reaching London, after an absence of nearly four years, he found his congregation at the Tabernacle again nearly scattered; and such was the depression of his own circumstances, that he was obliged to sell his household furniture to pay his orphan-house debts. His congregation, however, began to interest themselves in his favour, and to assist in the liquidation of this oppressive obligation. About this time the countess of

Huntingdon sent for him to preach at her house, and her adoption of him as her chaplain excited the curiosity of a number of persons of rank to hear him, among whom were the earl of Chesterfield and lord Bolingbroke. In the following September he visited Scotland a third time. On this occasion, a synod being assembled at Glasgow "Anent employing Mr Whitefield," it was objected to him, among other things, that he asserted assurance to be necessary to faith; encouraged a dependence on impulses and immediate revelation; and declared, on slender evidence, some people converted, and others carnal and unregenerated. To this it was replied, on his behalf, that his sentiments on these points had been for some time past less enthusiastic; that he now seldom preached a sermon without guarding his hearers against sudden and deceptive impulses, and admonishing them that a holy life is the best evidence of a state of grace.

On his return from Scotland, his thoughts were wholly engaged on combining with his orphan-house a plan for the establishment of a seminary of literature and academical learning. In 1749 he made a laborious excursion through the west of England in the spring, and to Yorkshire and the north in the autumn of the same year, preaching as usual to immense multitudes. In 1751 he visited Ireland, and made a similar impression in Dublin and other places; and then departed for Scotland, which he left in August to proceed to London, with the view of again embarking for America, where he landed in the following October. On his arrival at Savannah, he found the orphan establishment in a highly flourishing condition; and, after a stay of some months, our indefatigable traveller once more returned to England in the spring of 1752.

In 1753 he formed a plan for the erection of a new tabernacle, which was completed and opened in June 1754. After preaching at it a short time, he resumed his itinerant preaching, in the course of which he again visited Scotland. In 1756 he opened his new chapel in Tottenham-court-road, where, and at the Tabernacle,

he for some time preached fifteen times a week, to the great injury of his health. In the latter end of the same year he again sailed for America; returned the following spring; and continued his unremitting labours for several succeeding years, until his seventh and last voyage to America in 1769, where he arrived on the 30th of November.

His career was now, however, drawing to a close. An asthmatic complaint had for some time been making inroads upon his constitution; and although that had several times threatened his dissolution, it was at last somewhat sudden and unexpected. From the seventeenth to the twentieth of September, 1770, he preached daily at Boston, which he left on the twenty-first, and continued preaching on his way until the twenty-ninth, when he delivered a discourse in the open air, which occupied him two hours. Notwithstanding this, he resolved to continue his journey forthwith, and arrived at Newbury on the same evening, with the intention of preaching there the next morning. On retiring to rest, however, he was much disturbed, and complained heavily of an oppression at his lungs. The symptom was fatal; for he expired at five o'clock on the ensuing morning of Sunday, the thirtieth of September 1770.

According to his own desire, Mr Whitefield was buried at the American town where he died. His funeral took place on the second of October, at one o'clock in the day, when all the bells in the town were tolled for several hours, while the vessels in the harbour hoisted the proper signals of mourning, and most of the respectable inhabitants attended the ceremony. Notwithstanding the difference between them, on the news of his death reaching England, John Wesley preached funeral sermons on the occasion to his congregations at the Tabernacle and the chapel in Tottenham-court-road; and most of his followers wore mourning.

It is scarcely necessary to observe, that very different characters have been given of this zealous and enthu-

siastic divine, possessing as he did both warm friends and bitter enemies. That he had much enthusiasm and some fanaticism in his composition, is obvious both from his journal and letters; but whether they were mixed with any portion of the craft and artifice which so frequently accompany these qualifications, is disputable. His narrations, like those of Wesley, contain obvious marks of a disposition to represent himself as directly under the special superintendence of Providence; and, in a similar manner, the most trifling incidents are magnified into miraculous interpositions in his favour. There is also an infusion of what the English language affords no better word for than *cant*, in many of his confessions and humiliations; but, for all this, no one that regards his course of life for the long period of thirty-four years, can reasonably pronounce him a hypocrite who merely acted a part. His continual collections for a distant object no doubt chiefly countenanced the insinuations of dishonesty, with which he was repeatedly assailed by those to whom his line of conduct was obnoxious; but nothing like proof of misapplication has ever been afforded. He has also been charged with secret immorality—principally, it is to be presumed, on the ground of his own frequent allusions to *darling* sins; and possibly no less so, as observed in the beginning of this notice, to the employment of language, in regard to petty conscious aberrations, which is too strong for the encounter of general apprehension. On the other hand, George Whitefield is much less chargeable with personal ambition than his more capable contemporary Wesley, to whom, regarding intellect and learning, he was also vastly inferior. The great talent of Whitefield, in fact, was popular oratory; and although he occasionally mixed a little buffoonery with his vehemence, it was not the less effectual on that account. As a writer his talents were very inferior; and it is probable that few but his immediate followers have perused his six volumes of sermons, tracts, and letters. On the whole, however, George Whitefield was a sin-

gularly gifted and extraordinary man; who, like most persons possessed of similar powers, passed like a meteor across life, leaving few lasting marks of his own particular existence, but many which show him to have exercised no contemptible operation on the character of the era in which he so conspicuously existed.

THE
MUSEUM OF THE
MUSEUM OF THE

LONDON
Printed by WILLIAM CLOWES,
Stamford-street.



A. PAGE. SCULP.

JAMES FERGUSON.

Published by Hunt & Clarke, Tavistock Street, Covent Garden.

A
SHORT ACCOUNT
OF
THE LIFE
OF
JAMES FERGUSON,

F. R. S.

WRITTEN BY HIMSELF.

LONDON: 1826.

PUBLISHED BY HUNT AND CLARKE,

TAVISTOCK-STREET, COVENT-GARDEN.

A

SHORT ACCOUNT

10

THE LIFE

JAMES FERGUSON

LONDON

Printed by WILLIAM CLOWES,
Stamford-street.

WRITTEN BY HIMSELF

LONDON: 1855

PUBLISHED BY HUNT AND CLARKE

75, FLEET-STREET, LONDON.

INTRODUCTION.

THE brief self-written "Memoirs" of James Ferguson supply so remarkable a testimony of the vigour of native intellect under circumstances of the greatest depression, that it is unnecessary to say a word upon their claim to a place in this series. To the rising generation, in particular, nothing can be more salutary than a contemplation of the perseverance and ingenuity with which inherent strength of mind will often conquer the apparently most insurmountable difficulties. It is not necessary in this place to decide upon the correctness of Dr Johnson's assertion, that genius is general capability accidentally directed in a particular channel; or to canvass that of the modern phrenologists, that nature has physically modified the human caput for the developement of peculiar aptitudes. In either case it is pleasant to be convinced, that mental energy will often break through a cloud of adverse enthrallments, and—as in the instance of the peasant-boy Ferguson—conduct to comparative elevation and general respect.

INTRODUCTION

The brief self-written "Memoirs" of James Ferguson supply so remarkable a testimony of the vigour of native intellect under circumstances of the greatest depression, that it is unnecessary to say a word upon their claim to a place in this series. To the rising generation, in particular, nothing can be more salutary than a contemplation of the perseverance and industry with which inherent strength of mind will often conquer the apparently most insurmountable difficulties. It is not necessary in this place to decide upon the correctness of Dr Johnson's assertion, that genius is general capability accidentally directed in a particular channel; or to canvass that of the modern physiologists, that nature has physically modified the human capacity for the development of peculiar aptitudes. In either case it is pleasant to be convinced, that mental energy will often break through a cloud of adverse circumstances, and—as in the instance of the peasant-boy Ferguson—conduct to comparative elevation and general respect.

THE LIFE
OF
JAMES FERGUSON.

As this is probably the last book I shall ever publish,* I beg leave to prefix to it a short account of myself, and of the manner I first began, and have since prosecuted my studies. For, as my setting out in life from a very low station, and in a remote part of the island, has occasioned some false and, indeed, very improbable particulars to be related of me, I therefore think it the better way, instead of contradicting them one by one, to give a faithful and circumstantial detail of my whole proceedings, from my first obscure beginning to the present time: wherein, if I should insert some particulars of little moment, I hope the good-natured reader will kindly excuse me.

I was born in the year 1710, a few miles from Keith, a little village in Bamffshire, in the north of Scotland; and can with pleasure say, that my parents, though poor, were religious and honest, lived in good repute with all who knew them, and died with good characters.

As my father had nothing to support a large family but his daily labour, and the profits arising from a few acres of land which he rented, it was not to be expected that he could bestow much on the education of his children: yet they were not neglected; for, at his leisure hours, he taught them to read and write. And it

* This Life was first published as a Preface to the Author's "Select Mechanical Exercises."

was while he was teaching my elder brother to read the Scotch catechism that I acquired my reading. Ashamed to ask my father to instruct me, I used, when he and my brother were abroad, to take the catechism, and study the lesson which he had been teaching my brother : and when any difficulty occurred, I went to a neighbouring old woman, who gave me such help as enabled me to read tolerably well before my father had thought of teaching me.

Some time after, he was agreeably surprised to find me reading by myself: he thereupon gave me farther instruction, and also taught me to write; which, with about three months I afterwards had at the grammar-school at Keith, was all the education I ever received.

My taste for mechanics arose from an odd accident.—When about seven or eight years of age, a part of the roof of the house being decayed, my father, desirous of mending it, applied a prop and lever to an upright spar to raise it to its former situation; and, to my great astonishment, I saw him, without considering the reason, lift up the ponderous roof, as if it had been a small weight. I attributed this at first to a degree of strength that excited my terror as well as wonder: but thinking farther of the matter, I recollected that he had applied his strength to that end of the lever which was farthest from the prop; and finding, on inquiry, that this was the means whereby the seeming wonder was effected, I began making levers (which I then called bars;) and by applying weights to them different ways, I found the power gained by my bar was just in proportion to the lengths of the different parts of the bar on either side of the prop. I then thought it was a great pity that, by means of this bar, a weight could be raised but a very little way. On this, I soon imagined, that, by pulling round a wheel, the weight might be raised to any height by tying a rope to the weight, and winding the rope round the axle of the wheel; and that the power gained, must be just as great as the wheel was broader than the axle was thick; and found it to be exactly so, by hanging one weight to a rope put round the wheel, and

another to the rope that coiled round the axle. So that, in these two machines, it appeared very plain, that their advantage was as great, as the space gone through by the working power exceeded the space gone through by the weight: and this property I also thought must take place in a wedge for cleaving wood; but then I happened not to think of the screw. By means of a turning lathe which my father had, and sometimes used, and a little knife, I was enabled to make wheels and other things necessary for my purpose.

I then wrote a short account of these machines, and sketched out figures of them with a pen, imagining it to be the first treatise of the kind that ever was written: but found my mistake when I afterwards showed it to a gentleman, who told me that these things were known long before, and showed me a printed book in which they were treated of: and I was much pleased when I found that my account (so far as I had carried it) agreed with the principles of mechanics in the book he showed me. And from that time my mind preserved a constant tendency to improve in that science.

But, as my father could not afford to maintain me while I was in pursuit only of these matters, and I was rather too young and weak for hard labour, he put me out to a neighbour to keep sheep, which I continued to do for some years; and in that time I began to study the stars in the night. In the day-time I amused myself by making models of mills, spinning-wheels, and such other things as I happened to see.

I then went to serve a considerable farmer in the neighbourhood, whose name was James Glashan. I found him very kind and indulgent; but he soon observed, that in the evenings, when my work was over, I went into a field with a blanket about me; lay down on my back, and stretched a thread with small beads upon it, at arm's length, between my eye and the stars; sliding the beads upon it till they hid such and such stars from my eye, in order to take their apparent distances from one another; and then, laying the thread down on a paper, I marked the stars thereon by the

beads, according to their respective positions, having a candle by me. My master at first laughed at me; but, when I explained my meaning to him, he encouraged me to go on: and that I might make fair copies in the day-time of what I had done in the night, he often worked for me himself. I shall always have a respect for the memory of that man.

One day he happened to send me with a message to the reverend Mr John Gilchrist, minister at Keith, to whom I had been known from my childhood. I carried my star-papers to show them to him, and found him looking over a large parcel of maps, which I surveyed with great pleasure, as they were the first I had ever seen. He then told me that the earth is round like a ball, and explained the map of it to me. I requested him to lend me *that* map, to take a copy of it in the evenings. He cheerfully consented to this, giving me, at the same time, a pair of compasses, a ruler, pens, ink, and paper; and dismissed me with an injunction not to neglect my master's business by copying the map, which I might keep as long as I pleased.

For this pleasant employment my master gave me more time than I could reasonably expect; and often took the threshing-flail out of my hands, and worked himself, while I sat by him in the barn, busy with my compasses, ruler, and pen.

When I had finished the copy, I asked leave to carry home the map: he told me I was at liberty to do so, and might stay two hours to converse with the minister. In my way thither, I happened to pass by the school at which I had been before, and saw a genteel-looking man (whose name I afterwards learnt was Cantley) painting a sun-dial on the wall. I stopt awhile to observe him, and the schoolmaster came out, and asked me what parcel it was that I had under my arm. I showed him the map, and the copy I had made of it, where-with he appeared to be very well pleased, and asked me whether I should not like to learn of Mr Cantley to make sun-dials. Mr Cantley looked at the copy of the

map, and commended it much; telling the school-master (Mr John Skinner) that it was a pity I did not meet with notice and encouragement. I had a good deal of conversation with him, and found him to be quite affable and communicative; which made me think I should be extremely happy if I could be farther acquainted with him.

I then proceeded with the map to the minister, and showed him the copy of it.—While we were conversing together, a neighbouring gentleman, Thomas Grant, Esq, of Achoynaney, happened to come in, and the minister immediately introduced me to him, showing him what I had done. He expressed great satisfaction, asked me some questions about the construction of maps, and told me, if that I would go and live at his house, he would order his butler, Alexander Cantley, to give me a great deal of instruction. Finding that this Cantley was the man whom I had seen painting the sun-dial, and of whom I had already conceived a very high opinion, I told squire Grant, that I should rejoice to be at his house as soon as the time was expired for which I was engaged with my present master.—He very politely offered to put one in my place; but this I declined.

When the term of my servitude was out, I left my good master, and went to the gentleman's house, where I quickly found myself with a most humane, good family. Mr Cantley, the butler, soon became my friend, and continued so till his death. He was the most extraordinary man that I ever was acquainted with, or perhaps ever shall see; for he was a complete master of arithmetic, a good mathematician, a master of music on every known instrument except the harp, understood Latin, French, and Greek, let blood extremely well, and could even prescribe as a physician upon any urgent occasion. He was what is generally called *self-taught*; but, I think, he might with much greater propriety have been termed God Almighty's scholar.

He immediately began to teach me decimal arithmetic and algebra; for I had already learnt vulgar arithmetic, at my leisure hours, from books. He then

proceeded to teach me the elements of geometry ; but, to my inexpressible grief, just as I was beginning that branch of science, he left Mr Grant, and went to the late earl of Fife's, at several miles distance. The good family I was then with could not prevail with me to stay after he was gone ; so I left them, and went to my father's.

He had made me a present of Gordon's "Geographical Grammar," which, at that time, was to me a great treasure. There is no figure of a globe in it, although it contains a tolerable description of the globes, and their use. From this description I made a globe in three weeks at my father's, having turned the ball thereof out of a piece of wood ; which ball I covered with paper, and delineated a map of the world upon it ; made the meridian ring and horizon of wood ; covered them with paper, and graduated them ; and was happy to find, that, by my globe (which was the first I ever saw) I could solve the problems.

But this was not likely to afford me bread, and I could not think of staying with my father, who I knew full well could not maintain me in that way, as it would be of no service to him ; and he had, without my assistance, hands sufficient for all his work.

I then went to a miller, thinking it would be a very easy business to attend the mill, and that I should have a great deal of leisure time to study decimal arithmetic and geometry. But my master, being too fond of tippling at an ale-house, left the whole care of the mill to me, and almost starved me for want of victuals ; so that I was glad when I could have a little oatmeal mixed with cold water to eat. I was engaged for a year in this man's service, at the end of which I left him, and returned in a very weak state to my father's.

Soon after I had recovered my former strength, a neighbouring farmer, who practised as a physician in that part of the country, came to my father's, wanting to have me as a labouring servant. My father advised me to go to doctor Young, telling me that the doctor would instruct me in that part of his business. This he

promised to do, which was a temptation to me. But instead of performing his promise, he kept me constantly to very hard labour, and never once showed me one of his books. All his servants complained that he was the hardest master they had ever lived with; and it was my misfortune to be engaged with him for half a year. But, at the end of three months, I was so much overwrought, that I was almost disabled, which obliged me to leave him: and he was so unjust as to give me nothing at all for the time I had been with him, because I did not complete my half-year's service; though he knew that I was not able, and had seen me working for the last fortnight, as much as possible, with one hand and arm, when I could not lift the other from my side. And what I thought was particularly hard, he never once tried to give me the least relief, farther than once bleeding me, which rather did me hurt than good, as I was very weak, and much emaciated. I then went to my father's, where I was confined for two months on account of my hurt, and despaired of ever recovering the use of my left arm. And during all that time, the doctor never once came to see me, although the distance was not quite two miles. But my friend Mr Cantley hearing of my misfortune, at twelve miles distance, sent me proper medicines and applications, by means of which I recovered the use of my arm; but found myself too weak to think of going into service again, and had entirely lost my appetite, so that I could take nothing but a draught of milk once a day for many weeks.

In order to amuse myself in this low state, I made a wooden clock, the frame of which was also of wood; and it kept time pretty well. The bell, on which the hammer struck the hours, was the neck of a broken bottle.

Having then no idea how any time-keeper could go but by a weight and a line, I wondered how a watch could go in all positions; and was sorry that I had never thought of asking Mr Cantley, who could very easily have informed me. But happening one day to

see a gentleman ride by my father's house (which was close by a public road) I asked him what o'clock it then was : he looked at his watch, and told me. As he did that with so much good-nature, I begged of him to show me the inside of his watch : and though he was an entire stranger, he immediately opened the watch, and put it into my hands. I saw the spring-box with part of the chain round it, and asked him what it was that made the box turn round : he told me that it was turned round by a steel spring within it. Having then never seen any other spring than that of my father's gun-lock, I asked how a spring within a box could turn the box so often round as to wind all the chain upon it. He answered, that the spring was long and thin ; that one end of it was fastened to the axis of the box, and the other end to the inside of the box ; that the axis was fixed, and the box was loose upon it. I told him I did not yet thoroughly understand the matter. Well, my lad, says he, take a long thin piece of whalebone, hold one end of it fast between your finger and thumb, and wind it round your finger : it will then endeavour to unwind itself ; and if you fix the other end of it to the inside of a small hoop, and leave it to itself, it will turn the hoop round and round, and wind up a thread tied to the outside of the hoop.—I thanked the gentleman, and told him that I understood the thing very well. I then tried to make a watch with wooden wheels, and made the spring of whalebone ; but found that I could not make the watch go when the balance was put on, because the teeth of the wheels were rather too weak to bear the force of a spring sufficient to move the balance ; although the wheels would run fast enough when the balance was taken off. I enclosed the whole in a wooden case, very little bigger than a breakfast tea-cup : but a clumsy neighbour one day looking at my watch, happened to let it fall ; and turning hastily about to pick it up, set his foot upon it, and crushed it all to pieces ; which so provoked my father, that he was almost ready to beat the man ; and discouraged me so much, that I never attempted to make such another

machine again, especially as I was thoroughly convinced I could never make one that would be of any real use.

As soon as I was able to go abroad, I carried my globe, clock, and copies of some other maps besides that of the world, to the late sir James Dunbar, of Durn, (about seven miles from where my father lived,) as I had heard that sir James was a very good-natured, friendly, inquisitive gentleman. He received me in a very kind manner, was pleased with what I showed him, and desired I would clean his clocks. This, for the first time I attempted; and then began to pick up some money in that way about the country, making sir James's house my home, at his desire.

Two large globular stones stood on the top of his gate; on one of them I painted (with oil colours) a map of the terrestrial globe, and on the other a map of the celestial, from a planisphere of the stars which I copied on paper from a celestial globe belonging to a neighbouring gentleman. The poles of the painted globes stood toward the poles of the heavens; on each, the twenty-four hours were placed around the equinoctial, so as to show the time of the day when the sun shone out, by the boundary where the half of the globe at any time enlightened by the sun was parted from the other half in the shade; the enlightened parts of the terrestrial globe answering to the like enlightened parts of the earth at all times. So that, whenever the sun shone on the globe, one might see to what places the sun was then rising, to what places it was setting, and all the places where it was then day or night, throughout the earth.

During the time I was at sir James's hospitable house, his sister, the honourable the lady Dipple, came there on a visit, and sir James introduced me to her. She asked me whether I could draw patterns for needle-work on aprons and gowns. On showing me some, I undertook the work, and drew several for her; some of which were copied from her patterns, and the rest I did according to my own fancy. On this, I was sent for by

other ladies in the country, and began to think myself growing very rich by the money I got for such drawings; out of which I had the pleasure of occasionally supplying the wants of my poor father.

Yet all this while I could not leave off star-gazing in the nights, and taking the places of the planets among the stars by my above-mentioned thread. By this I could observe how the planets changed their places among the stars, and delineated their paths on the celestial map, which I had copied from the above-mentioned celestial globe.

By observing what constellations the ecliptic passed through in that map, and comparing these with the starry heaven, I was so impressed as sometimes to imagine that I saw the ecliptic in the heaven, among the stars, like a broad circular road for the sun's apparent course; and fancied the paths of the planets to resemble the narrow ruts made by cart-wheels, sometimes on one side of a plain road and sometimes on the other, crossing the road at small angles, but never going far from either side of it.

Sir James's house was full of pictures and prints, several of which I copied with pen and ink: this made him think I might become a painter.

Lady Dipple had been but a few weeks there, when William Baird, Esq, of Auchmedden, came on a visit: he was the husband of one of that lady's daughters, and I found him to be very ingenious and communicative: he invited me to go to his house and stay some time with him, telling me that I should have free access to his library, which was a very large one; and that he would furnish me with all sorts of implements for drawing. I went thither, and staid about eight months; but was much disappointed in finding no books of astronomy in his library, except what was in the two volumes of Harris's "Lexicon Technicum," although there were many books on geography and other sciences: several of these indeed were in Latin, and more in French; which being languages that I did not under-

stand, I had recourse to him for what I wanted to know of these subjects, which he cheerfully read to me ; and it was as easy for him, at sight, to read English from a Greek, Latin, or French book, as from an English one. He furnished me with pencils and Indian ink, showing me how to draw with them : and although he had but an indifferent hand at that work, yet he was a very acute judge ; and consequently a very fit person for showing me how to correct my own work. He was the first who ever sat to me for a picture ; and I found it was much easier to draw from the life than from any picture whatever, as nature was more striking than any imitation of it.

Lady Dipple came to his house in about half a year after I went thither. And as they thought I had a genius for painting, they consulted together about what might be the best way to put me forward. Mr Baird thought it would be no difficult matter to make a collection for me among the neighbouring gentlemen, to put me to a painter at Edinburgh : but he found, upon trial, that nothing worth the while could be done among them. And as to himself, he could not do much that way, because he had but a small estate, and a very numerous family.

Lady Dipple then told me that she was to go to Edinburgh next spring, and that if I would go thither, she would give me a year's bed and board at her house *gratis*, and make all the interest she could for me among her acquaintance there.—I thankfully accepted of her kind offer ; and instead of giving me one year, she gave me two. I carried with me a letter of recommendation from the lord Pitsligo (a near neighbour of esquire Baird's) to Mr John Alexander, a painter in Edinburgh ; who allowed me to pass an hour every day at his house for a month, to copy from his drawings ; and said he would teach me to paint in oil colours, if I would serve him seven years, and my friends would maintain me all that time : but this was too much for me to desire them to do ; nor did I choose to serve so long. I was then recommended to other painters,

but they would do nothing without money. So I was quite at a loss what to do.

In a few days after this, I received a letter of recommendation from my good friend squire Baird to the reverend Dr Robert Keith at Edinburgh, to whom I gave an account of my bad success among the painters there. He told me, that if I would copy from nature, I might do without their assistance; as all the rules for drawing signified but very little when one came to draw from the life; and by what he had seen of my drawings brought from the north, he judged I might succeed very well in drawing pictures from the life, in Indian ink, on vellum. He then sat to me for his own picture, and sent me with it and a letter of recommendation to the right honourable the lady Jane Douglas, who lived with her mother, the marchioness of Douglas, at Merchiston-house, near Edinburgh. Both the marchioness and lady Jane behaved to me in the most friendly manner, on Dr Keith's account, and sat for their pictures; telling me, at the same time, that I was in the very room in which lord Napier invented and computed the logarithms; and that, if I thought it would inspire me, I should always have the same room whenever I came to Merchiston. I staid there several days, and drew several pictures of lady Jane; of whom it was hard to say, whether the greatness of her beauty, or the goodness of her temper and disposition, was the most predominant. She sent these pictures to ladies of her acquaintance, in order to recommend me to them; by which means I soon had as much business as I could possibly manage, so as not only to put a good deal of money in my own pocket, but also to spare what was sufficient to help to supply my father and mother in their old age. Thus a business was providentially put into my hands, which I followed for six-and-twenty years.

Lady Dipple, being a woman of the strictest piety, kept a watchful eye over me at first, and made me give her an exact account at night of what families I had been in throughout the day, and of the money I had received. She took the money each night, desiring I

would keep an account of what I had put into her hands; telling me that I should duly have, out of it, what I wanted for clothes, and to send to my father. But, in less than half a year, she told me that she would thenceforth trust me with being my own banker; for she had made a good deal of private inquiry how I had behaved when I was out of her sight through the day, and was satisfied with my conduct.

During my two years' stay at Edinburgh, I somehow took a violent inclination to study anatomy, surgery, and physic, all from reading of books, and conversing with gentlemen on these subjects; which, for that time, put all thoughts of astronomy out of my mind, and I had no inclination to become acquainted with any one there who taught either mathematics or astronomy: for nothing would serve me but to be a doctor.

At the end of the second year I left Edinburgh, and went to see my father, thinking myself tolerably well qualified to be a physician in that part of the country; and I carried a good deal of medicines, plasters, &c. thither.—But, to my mortification, I soon found that all my medical theories and study were of little use in practice. And then, finding that very few paid me for the medicines they had, and that I was far from being so successful as I could wish, I quite left off that business, and began to think of taking to the more sure one of drawing pictures again. For this purpose I went to Inverness, where I had eight months' business.

When I was there, I began to think of astronomy again; and was heartily sorry for having quite neglected it at Edinburgh, where I might have improved my knowledge by conversing with those who were very able to assist me.—I began to compare the ecliptic with its twelve signs (through which the sun goes in twelve months) to the circle of twelve hours on the dial plate of a watch, the hour-hand to the sun, and the minute-hand to the moon, moving in the ecliptic; the one always overtaking the other at a place forwarder than it did at their last conjunction before. On this, I contrived and finished a scheme on paper for showing the motions and

places of the sun and moon in the ecliptic on each day of the year, perpetually; and consequently the days of all the new and full moons.

To this I wanted to add a method for showing the eclipses of the sun and moon; of which I knew the cause long before, by having observed that the moon was, for one half of her period, on the north side of the ecliptic, and for the other half on the south. But, having not observed her course long enough among the stars by my above-mentioned thread, so as to delineate her path upon my celestial map, in order to find the two opposite points of the ecliptic in which her orbit crosses it, I was altogether at a loss how and where in the ecliptic (in my scheme) to place these intersecting points: this was in the year 1739.

At last, I recollected, that when I was with squire Grant, of Achoynaney, in the year 1730, I had read, that on the 1st of January, 1690, the moon's ascending node was on the 10th minute of the first degree of Aries; and that her nodes moved backward through the whole ecliptic in 18 years 224 days, which was at the rate of 3 min. 11 sec. every 24 hours. But as I scarce knew, in the year 1730, what the moon's nodes meant, I took no farther notice of it at that time.

However, in the year 1739, I set to work at Inverness; and after a tedious calculation of the slow motion of the nodes from January, 1690, to January, 1740, it appeared to me, that (if I was sure I had remembered right) the moon's ascending node must be in 23 deg. 25 min. of Cancer at the beginning of the year 1740. And so I added the eclipse-part to my scheme, and called it the Astronomical Rotula.

When I had finished it, I showed it to the reverend Mr Alexander Macbean, one of the ministers at Inverness, who told me he had a set of almanacks by him for several years past, and would examine it by the eclipses mentioned in them. We examined it together, and found that it agreed throughout with the days of all the new and full moons and eclipses mentioned in these almanacks; which made me think I had constructed it

upon true astronomical principles. On this, Mr Macbean desired me to write to Mr Maclaurin, professor of the mathematics at Edinburgh, and give him an account of those methods by which I had formed my plan, requesting him to correct it where it was wrong. He returned me a most polite and friendly answer, (although I had never seen him during my stay at Edinburgh,) and informed me that I had only mistaken the radical mean place of the ascending node by a quarter of a degree; and that if I would send the drawing of my rotula to him, he would examine it, and endeavour to procure me a subscription to defray the charges of engraving it on copper-plates, if I chose to publish it. I then made a new and correct drawing of it, and sent it to him, who soon got me a very handsome subscription, by setting the example himself, and sending subscription-papers to others.

I then returned to Edinburgh, and had the rotula plates engraved there by Mr Cooper.* It has gone through several impressions, and always sold very well till the year 1752, when the style was changed, which rendered it quite useless.—Mr Maclaurin received me with the greatest civility when I first went to see him at Edinburgh. He then became an exceeding good friend to me, and continued so till his death.

One day I requested him to show me his orrery, which he immediately did. I was greatly delighted with the motions of the earth and moon in it, and would gladly have seen the wheel-work, which was concealed in a brass box, and the box and planets above it were surrounded by an armillary sphere. But he told me, that he never had opened it; and I could easily perceive that it could not be opened but by the hand of some ingenious clock-maker, and not without a great deal of time and trouble.

After a good deal of thinking, and calculation, I found that I could contrive the wheel-work for turning the planets in such a machine, and giving them their pro-

* Cooper was master to the justly celebrated Mr Robert Strange, who was at that time his apprentice.

gressive motions ; but should be very well satisfied if I could make an orrery to show the motions of the earth and moon, and of the sun round its axis. I then employed a turner to make me a sufficient number of wheels and axles, according to patterns which I gave him in drawing : and after having cut the teeth in the wheels by a knife, and put the whole together, I found that it answered all my expectations. It showed the sun's motion round his axis, the diurnal and annual motions of the earth on its inclined axis, which kept its parallelism in its whole course round the sun ; the motions and phases of the moon, with the retrograde motion of the nodes of her orbit ; and consequently all the variety of seasons, the different lengths of days and nights, the days of the new and full moons, and eclipses.

When it was all completed, except the box that covers the wheels, I showed it to Mr Maclaurin, who commended it in presence of a great many young gentlemen who attended his lectures. He desired me to read them a lecture on it, which I did without any hesitation, seeing I had no reason to be afraid of speaking before a great and good man who was my friend. Soon after that I sent it in a present to the reverend and ingenious Mr Alexander Irvine, one of the ministers at Elgin, in Scotland.

I then made a smaller and neater orrery, of which all the wheels were of ivory, and I cut the teeth in them with a file. This was done in the beginning of the year 1743 ; and, in May that year, I brought it with me to London, where it was soon after bought by sir Dudley Rider. I have made six orreries since that time, and there are not any two of them in which the wheel-work is alike : for I could never bear to copy one thing of that kind from another, because I still saw there was great room for improvements.

I had a letter of recommendation from Mr Baron Edlin, at Edinburgh, to the right honourable Stephen Poyntz, Esq, at St James's, who had been preceptor to his royal highness the late duke of Cumberland, and

was well known to be possessed of all the good qualities that can adorn a human mind. To me his goodness was really beyond the power of expression; and I had not been a month in London till he informed me that he had wrote to an eminent professor of mathematics to take me into his house, and give me board and lodging, with all proper instructions to qualify me for teaching a mathematical school he (Mr Poyntz) had in view for me, and would get me settled in it. This I should have liked very well, especially as I began to be tired of drawing pictures, in which, I confess, I never strove to excel, because my mind was still pursuing things more agreeable. He soon after told me he had just received an answer from the mathematical master, desiring I might be sent immediately to him. On hearing this, I told Mr Poyntz, that I did not know how to maintain my wife during the time I must be under the master's tuition. What, says he, are you a married man? I told him I had been so ever since May in the year 1739. He said he was sorry for it, because it quite defeated his scheme; as the master of the school he had in view for me must be a bachelor.

He then asked me, what business I intended to follow? I answered, that I knew of none besides that of drawing pictures. On this he desired me to draw the pictures of his lady and children, that he might show them in order to recommend me to others; and told me, that, when I was out of business, I should come to him, and he would find me as much as he could: and I soon found as much as I could execute: but he died in a few years after, to my inexpressible grief.

Soon afterward, it appeared to me, that although the moon goes round the earth, and that the sun is far on the outside of the moon's orbit, yet the moon's motion must be in a line that is always concave toward the sun: and upon making a delineation representing her absolute path in the heavens, I found it to be really so. I then made a simple machine for delineating both her path and the earth's on a long paper laid on the floor. I carried the machine and delineation to the late Martin

Folkes, Esquire, president of the royal society, on a Thursday afternoon. He expressed great satisfaction at seeing it, as it was a new discovery; and took me that evening with him to the royal society, where I showed the delineation, and the method of doing it.

When the business of the society was over, one of the members desired me to dine with him next Saturday at Hackney; telling me that his name was Ellicott, and that he was a watch-maker.

I accordingly went to Hackney, and was kindly received by Mr John Ellicott, who then showed me the very same kind of delineation, and part of the machine by which he had done it; telling me that he had thought of it twenty years before. I could easily see, by the colour of the paper, and of the ink lines upon it, that it must have been done many years before I saw it. He then told me what was very certain, that he had neither stolen the thought from me, nor had I from him. And from that time till his death, Mr Ellicott was one of my best friends. The figure of this machine and delineation is in the seventh plate of my book of "Astronomy."

Soon after the style was changed, I had my rotula new engraved; but have neglected it too much by not fitting it up and advertising it. After this, I drew out a scheme, and had it engraved, for showing all the problems of the rotula except the eclipses: and, in place of that, it shows the times of rising and setting of the sun, moon, and stars; and the positions of the stars for any time of the night.

In the year 1747, I published a dissertation on the phenomena of the harvest-moon, with the description of a new orrery, in which there are only four wheels. But having never had grammatical education, nor time to study the rules of just composition, I acknowledge that I was afraid to put it to the press; and for the same cause, I ought to have the same fears still. But having the pleasure to find that "Select Mechanical Exercises," my first work, was not ill received, I was emboldened to go on, in publishing my "Astronomy,"

“ Mechanical Lectures,” “ Table and Tracts relative to several Arts and Sciences,” “ The Young Gentleman and Lady’s Astronomy,” and a small treatise on electricity.

In the year 1748, I ventured to read lectures on the eclipse of the sun that fell on the 14th of July in that year. Afterwards I began to read astronomical lectures on an orrery which I made, and of which the figures of all the wheel-work are contained in the sixth and seventh plates of my “ Select Mechanical Exercises.” I next began to make an apparatus for lectures on mechanics, and gradually increased the apparatus for other parts of experimental philosophy, buying from others what I could not make for myself, till I brought it to its present state.—I then entirely left off drawing pictures, and employed myself in the much pleasanter business of reading lectures on mechanics, hydrostatics, hydraulics, pneumatics, electricity, and astronomy: in all which, my encouragement has been greater than I could have expected.

The best machine I ever contrived is the eclipsareon, of which there is a figure in the thirteenth plate of my “ Astronomy.” It shows the time, quantity, duration, and progress of solar eclipses at all parts of the earth. My next best contrivance is the universal dialing cylinder, of which there is a figure in the eighth plate of the supplement to my “ Mechanical Lectures.”

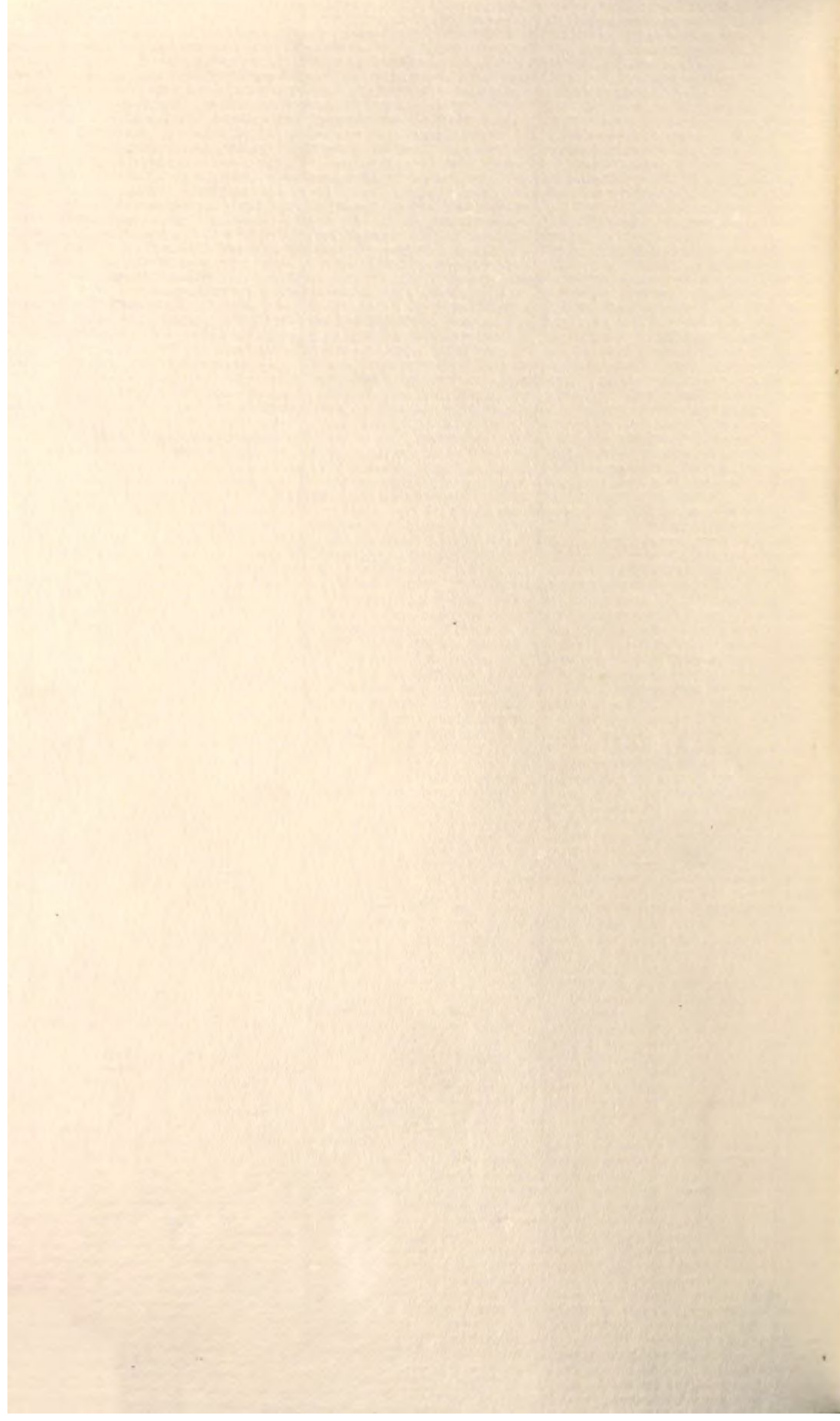
It is now thirty years since I came to London; and during all that time, I have met with the highest instances of friendship from all ranks of people both in town and country, which I do here acknowledge with the utmost respect and gratitude; and particularly the goodness of our present gracious sovereign, who, out of his privy purse, allows me fifty pounds a year, which is regularly paid without any deduction.

SEQUEL.

THIS self-taught and ingenious man survived the period of his composition of the foregoing brief but interesting memoir, published originally in 1773, about three years. His works during that interval, were "Two Letters (subsequently followed by a third) to the Reverend John Kennedy, containing an Account of many Mistakes in the Astronomical Part of his Scripture Chronology, and of his abusive Treatment of Astronomical Authors, &c." 8vo. These appeared in 1775, as did his last work, entitled "The Art of Drawing in Perspective made easy to those who have no previous Knowledge of the Mathematics," 8vo. Mr Ferguson died in the year 1776, having struggled with a constitution naturally infirm, longer than could have been reasonably expected. The extraordinary points in the intellectual character of this ingenious person, were his inventive and executive power in the construction of mechanical contrivances. In respect to acquired knowledge, he may be said to have had a very considerable acquaintance with astronomy, and an acute and discerning faculty in the cultivation of natural and experimental philosophy. He also possessed, what is seldom acquired under the untoward circumstances of a paucity of elemental instruction, a happy manner of conveying his ideas with ease and perspicuity, an accomplishment which made him very useful and very popular, both as a writer and a lecturer. His mathematical acquirements were, however, but superficial, and of algebra he understood little beyond the notation. In morals and conduct he was unexceptionable, unless the fact of his dying worth upwards of six thousand

pounds, although in the habit of continually receiving presents, certainly given on the supposition that his circumstances continued narrow and bounded, may be deemed in some degree disingenuous. Some allowance, however, must be made on this score to early habits of frugality and parsimony; and the consciousness of infirm health, which might suddenly reduce him to the necessity of an exclusive reliance on his savings. Of clear judgment and unwearied application, innocent in manners, humble, courteous, benevolent, and communicative—for all this is said of him by those who knew him best—it is not often that any walk of life produces a more meritorious and respectable individual than JAMES FERGUSON.

Bayerische
Staatsbibliothek
München





H. Heinrich

Whitefield, George,

Journal of a voyage from London to Savannah in Georgia

London 1826

Biogr.c. 442 m-6

urn:nbn:de:bvb:12-bsb10071513-5